

ENEMIES

The proof that
definitely identifies
all enemies, exposes
their methods of
operation, and points
out the way of
complete protection
for those who love
righteousness

By

J. F. RUTHERFORD

Author of

**RECONCILIATION GOVERNMENT
DELIVERANCE CREATION
PROPHETIC LIGHT
and other books**

*First printing
1,000,000 copies*

Publishers

**W A T C H T O W E R
BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY
International Bible Students Association
Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.**

Also

London, Toronto, Strathfield, Cape Town,
Berne, Copenhagen, and in other countries.

**COPYRIGHT, 1937, BY J. F. RUTHERFORD
Made in the United States of America**

Dedicated to the Most High God

४९९

अर्दित्त

"God,

my rock,

in him will

I take refuge;

my shield, and the

horn of my salvation,

my high tower, and

my refuge; my saviour,

thou savest me from

violence. I will call upon

Jehovah, who is worthy

to be praised: so shall

I be saved from mine
enemies."

५०८

- 2 Samuel 22: 3,4

A.R.V.

U.S.A.

(Greece)

69
3125

ENEMIES

\mathbf{p}^i

ENEMIES

CHAPTER (100) 41

FEAR

"And the tree of the field shall yield his fruit, and the land shall yield her increase, and they shall remain on their own soil in security, so shall they know that I am Jehovah, when I have broken the bars of their yoke, and shall deliver them out of the hand of them who have been using them as slaves."—Ezekiel 34: 27, Rotherham.

THE PEOPLES of the nations of earth keenly feel their insecurity. The men who rule are few in number, harsh, arrogant, cruel and oppressive, while the people in general are held in slavery to fear and continuously in dread of what the future may bring. Sober-minded persons who love righteousness and desire to see justice prevail often in the hour of meditation have thoughts like these: "There are so many calamities befalling the various nations of the earth and the peoples thereof that I am apprehensive, uneasy and fearful that some dreadful calamity will befall me and my little ones. Revolutions have rocked the nations to their very foundation, and no nation appears to be stable. All things in the earth seem to be upside down; the trees drop their immature fruit, the lands are swept by floods and dust storms, the pests destroy that which grows until the fields are barren, the

people are shoved about from one place to another until many find no dwelling place, and all persons seem to be unhappy. If only I could find a place of complete security where I could be entirely free from care, anxiety and fear, that would be an ideal state. I wish that I might know why this apprehensive and fearful condition exists throughout the earth; why it has come so generally upon the peoples and nations, and whether or not there will ever be a time and place where honest, sincere, righteous persons may feel entirely secure in their homes and without the fear of loss of their property, health and life." The purpose of what follows is to aid sincere and honest persons to arrive at the just conclusion in the matter.

Twenty centuries ago the most righteous man that ever trod the earth, filled with the spirit of wisdom and with keen prophetic vision, in answer to a question propounded to him concerning the end of the world, gave utterance to these words: "There shall be . . . upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; . . . men's hearts failing them for fear." Those few words spoken by that Great Prophet exactly describe the condition that now exists throughout the earth. His prophetic words of wisdom, taken together with the facts we now see about us, carefully considered, enable one to learn why the present unhappy conditions exist, and lead to greater information concerning the immediate future.

Even the ruling powers of every nation fear. They fear for themselves and for the positions

they hold. Every nation fears every other nation, and the effect of their insecurity has induced all nations to spend a great amount of energy and money of the peoples to prepare for war. The preparations for war in 1914 were small compared with the preparations now going forward in almost every nation on earth. It is manifest that such unusual activity is induced by fear. Each nation is fearful that some other nation will come upon them with greater force and take away what they have. It appears to be a time in which every man's hand is against his neighbor. The few that rule employ coercive means to compel the people in general to bow to their dictates, and an unhappy condition both for the rulers and for the ruled exists. In every land the people mourn, and one is reminded of the proverb: "When the wicked beareth rule, the people mourn."—Proverbs 29:2.

Call to mind some of the things that have come to pass since 1914 and that are recorded on the pages of history and there stand as indisputable facts. In that year, and with no apparently reasonable cause, the nations suddenly rushed into war, and for four years that followed Continental Europe was drenched with the lifeblood of millions of men who did not know just why they were fighting each other. The rulers had commanded them to go to war, and they obeyed. Suddenly, in November, 1918, the war ceased, and no ruler could assign a sound reason why the conflict had suddenly stopped. Prior to that time the nations were ruled by aristocrats and imperialistic mon-

ment until the people are bound to bow to the rule of one man. The chief ambition of such is to seize power and stay in power regardless of the rights and privileges of others. Any part or branch of the government that seems to be in his way the dictator proceeds to abolish. He and his associates take away from the people the right of suffrage and of representation and destroy the courts of justice and set up instead tribunals of selfish men who are looking to selfish interests and not to the common welfare.

Instead of the great war's making the world safe for democracy the greater part of Europe is now ruled by dictators. Stalin, who succeeded Lenin as dictator of Russia, was for some time a student at a theological seminary, being trained for the religious priesthood. He became a revolutionist and now rules Russia extravagantly, harshly and ruthlessly. Mussolini, a bricklayer and political agitator, became a political gang chieftain. He led a march on Rome in 1922 and shortly thereafter became the prime minister or arbitrary ruler: a gang leader, who bluffed himself into office because the king was afraid of him and yielded to his bluffs. Concerning him it is recorded: "He assumed the chief portfolios, brought about changes in the electoral laws that insured his continued power, established a rigorous censorship of the press, and prosecuted and drove into exile his chief opponents. He decreed the passage of laws which vitally affected the political, social and economic life of Italy." (*The Encyclopedia Americana*, Volume 19, page 655)

killed or imprisoned all who did not apparently support them. The people suffer, being robbed of their material wealth, put in fear of their liberty and life, and are in great distress and perplexity.

The foregoing is a sample of the conditions existing in Continental Europe. Other nations of the world are in a similar condition and are ruled by dictators, and the rulers are moved by fear. The British Empire is the only monarchy that survived the World War, and Britain and France are the only nations of Europe now that have a semblance of democratic rule. But there is an abundance of evidence that the ruling classes of those nations greatly fear for their future existence. In Great Britain conspiracy is at work both within and outside of the nation, looking to the overthrow of the Empire, and, moved by fear, that nation, each year since the World War, has continued to increase her war preparations. Sometime in the near future it will doubtless be seen that the recent abdication of Britain's king was not merely due to the influence of a woman, but due to a greater influence that is symbolized by a woman.

The United States emerged from the World War holding the bag, having lost a great number of men, and expended millions of the people's money, and that without any gain or profit. Since then democracy has rapidly degenerated, and today the tendency to rule by a dictator is growing rapidly. The element that rules now has not long been in the saddle of governmental

affairs, and, fearing the loss of authority that has been acquired, that ruling element seeks to concentrate the power of the nation in the executive of the government, this in utter disregard of state rights and the rights of the people, and looks forward to an early day when the whole nation may be ruled by a dictator, behind whom is a more powerful force. A bold and daring effort is now being put forth to curtail the power of the highest court in the land and make it the tool of a one-man dictator and, that being accomplished, the Constitution, which has long been a safeguard to the people, will quickly become a mere scrap of paper. For 150 years the American people have obeyed the law of the land gladly and without any question of their allegiance to the Constitution and the laws of their nation. But now the official element, that is, the few men that rule, fearing that they may not be able to keep the people in line, have adopted unusual and unreasonable methods to compel law-abiding citizens to constantly declare their allegiance to those who now rule. For 150 years it has not been thought necessary to compel the people to salute the flag and to daily declare their allegiance, because all persons are presumed to be obedient to the laws until there is evidence that they have violated the law. Quite recently, however, the governing element, and particularly those who are behind the throne, fearing that the authority and power may slip away from them, have adopted the unusual practice of compelling school children to daily salute the flag and

sing so-called "patriotic songs", and which are supposed to make them more law-abiding. The governing element, in fear, are also greatly perplexed as to how they can hold the people in subjection and hold their own jobs. Democracy is rapidly passing from the land.

Added to all the political troubles of the world that have so greatly increased since 1918, the nations of the earth have been woefully afflicted by storms, floods, fires, earthquakes, famines, pestilences and other like calamities. Sit-down strikes and other senseless labor disturbances have greatly increased, and it is apparent that these disturbances are induced by a secret crowd that is conspiring to overthrow all rule of the people and to concentrate the rule in the hands of a dictator. The extremely radical element, which is unreasonable and cruel, such as the Nazis, grows rapidly in America, and thousands of spies are scattered amongst the people to undermine their faith and confidence in the form of government that has so long existed in this land. Added to these disturbing things, the gross crimes of kidnaping, robbery and murder are constantly on the increase and few if any of the people feel secure in their homes or their property or in their life. Both the governing element and the common people sense an approaching catastrophe and strictly in line with the prophetic words above recorded: 'Men's hearts failing them for fear of what seems to be approaching.'

The common people have no understanding of the constant intrigue and the political chicanery that is going on within the nations and between the nations. The selfish ruling element adopt all manner of means to keep the people from learning the inside workings of the political gang. The people see themselves being completely deprived of their freedom of thought, freedom of speech, and freedom of action, and they are in distress and perplexity concerning what the future holds for them. They are in fear and perplexity of how they can protect themselves against the criminal element that is bearing down upon them, against the poverty that surrounds them, and against the calamities that threaten them. They have great difficulty in finding anyone whom they can trust. Each year their burdens of taxation are increased. They see little hope for their children, and their hearts fail them when they consider what the future may hold. There has never been a time in the history of man in which fear has so completely seized upon the people as now.

In view of these facts, none of which can be denied, sincere persons will here consider calmly the prophetic words of that great and wise man who, looking down upon the present time, said: "There shall be . . . upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; . . . men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth." (Luke 21:25, 26) There can be no doubt that the physical facts now present are com-

pletely in harmony with and therefore in fulfillment of the foregoing and prophetic words. The sincere people of the world, who think soberly and without prejudice, those who desire righteousness and peace and who desire security for themselves and their loved ones in their home, property and life, are asking questions like the following, to wit:

Why is there so much unrighteousness and wickedness in the world today? Why have these perilous times come upon the world in this day, and particularly since the ending of the World War? Why have the woes and calamities increased since the year 1918? Why does there now exist such a great lack of confidence among the nations, among both the rulers and the peoples of the nations? Why is it that almost everyone is looked upon as an enemy? Is there a reason for the existence of such a dreadful condition? Can there be found correct answers to these questions, answers upon which we can confidently rely? Is there anything upon which we may base a hope for better conditions of the future?

The same great man who gave utterance to the foregoing prophetic words, foretelling the time of peril coming upon the nations of the earth, also gave the true and correct answer to each and every one of the foregoing questions and all questions related thereto. That great man was and is Christ Jesus, the Son of the Almighty God. He is the One who spake as never man spake before or since. He it was who said concerning the Word of the Almighty

God, which is recorded in the Bible: "Thy word is truth." (John 17: 17) The full, complete and satisfying answers to the foregoing and related questions are found in the Bible, and nowhere else. Before attempt is made to locate the answers, let each reader ask himself these questions and fully answer the same to the satisfaction of his own conscience: Do I believe that the Almighty God, the Creator of heaven and earth, really exists, and that he is the Giver of life to man and the rewarder of all them that diligently seek him? Do I believe that the Bible is the Word of the Almighty God, and therefore the truth? Do I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of Almighty God, and that he speaks the absolute truth and with authority, and upon his speech honest men may confidently rely?

All those who can answer these questions in the affirmative, who do believe on God and Christ Jesus, and that the Bible is the Word of truth, and who then, without prejudice, will carefully consider what is hereinafter written, will find complete and satisfactory answer to each of the foregoing questions concerning the time of peril, which now confronts the world, and will also see what the immediate future holds.

In the nations that claim to be "Christian nations", and which collectively are called "Christendom", the present day distress and perplexity is the greatest, when viewing the whole world. The sincere people of these nations, who desire to understand the truth and

to know what the future holds, will study and give heed to what is written in the Word of truth, upon which Word of truth is founded that which is herein stated. This does not at all mean that such sincere persons must join any organization under the sun. What the people need in this hour of distress is a knowledge of the truth, and then to be diligent to obey the truth. The meek of the earth are those who are willing to be taught, and such are the ones that seek to understand the truth.

Those who are anxious and sincerely desire to know the true answers to the foregoing questions will lay aside all prejudice against the Bible, and all preconceived conclusions as to what the Bible contains, and all prejudice created by religion or the religious practitioners, and will carefully and honestly consider the facts now well known to all in the light of what is recorded in the Bible, because now is the time when the Bible can be understood and harmonized. Never before in the history of man has there existed such a great necessity of knowing and understanding God's Word of truth as now. The indisputable facts are that the nations and the people are in great fear, which fear is induced by enemies, and therefore the people are in bondage. All such, then, should give careful heed to the words spoken by Jesus, to wit: "If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples [those who learn the truth] indeed; and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free." (John 8:31, 32) All honest and sincere persons desire

to be free. The truth can be learned only by ascertaining the source of truth and then by following that true and safe guide. The opinion of imperfect man is of no value in learning the truth unless it is fully supported by what is known to be absolutely true as recorded in God's Word. Tradition by men is merely the expression of opinion of man, which opinion was first expressed long ago, and has been handed down from one generation to another. The only perfect man ever on earth was Jesus, and he did not speak and teach his own opinion, but declared only the things that he had received from the Almighty God. The testimony of Jesus upon this point is this: "My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me." (John 7:16) "He that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him." (John 8:26) "To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth."—John 18:37.

A man is put in fear of his enemies chiefly because of a lack of knowledge and therefore his inability to know the identity of his enemies. It is necessary for him to identify his enemies, to learn of their methods of operation and what course he may take to protect himself against such enemies. A man, therefore, must have a sure and correct guide in identifying his enemies and finding protection from them. Where will he find such a guide? The Almighty God gives this information, which he caused his prophet to write down, to wit: "Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path."

(Psalm 119:105) The meek man is the one who desires to learn the truth and is willing to be taught, and for his benefit this great truth is recorded in the Bible. "The meek will he guide in judgment, and the meek will he teach his way." (Psalm 25:9) The man who has great fear and therefore does not enjoy peace will find consolation in these words written in the Scriptures: "Great peace have they which love thy law; and nothing shall offend them." — Psalm 119:165.

Every man has enemies, and for centuries men have suffered greatly at the hands of enemies. Since the year 1914, and particularly since 1918, enemies have become more vicious. Those who have considered the matter know that such is the truth. The Scriptures give a satisfactory reason. It is of very vital importance to learn the source of such wickedness and the reason for the increased activity of enemies in the past few years. If you read carefully what follows herein you will gain that much desired and profitable knowledge.

CHAPTER II

ADVERSARY

"The way of the wicked seduceth them."
—Proverbs 12: 26.

A DVERSARY is one who opposes another without just cause or excuse, and is therefore an enemy. The existence of creatures implies that there is a Creator. The Creator is the immortal One, from everlasting to everlasting, and his name is God. (Psalm 90: 2; 1 Timothy 6: 15, 16) "God created the heaven and the earth." (Genesis 1: 1) God means the Almighty. He reveals himself as, to wit: "Almighty God," which means the One whose power is unlimited; "Lord," meaning supreme Ruler; "Jehovah," meaning his purpose toward his creatures; "Father," meaning the Giver of life; and "Most High", He who is over and above all.

For his pleasure God created all things. (Revelation 4: 11) The beginning of his creation was the Logos, his Beloved One, and thereafter God used the Logos as his active agent in the creation of all things that are created. (John 1:3; Proverbs 8: 22-24; Revelation 3: 14; Colossians 1: 15-17) God the Almighty is that great spirit which no man has seen and no human eyes can ever see. (1 Timothy 6: 16) He is the Only Being, that is to say, the self-existing One, and is therefore properly spoken of as "The Spirit Being".

God brought into existence many spirit creatures. A spirit creature is one that is invisible to human eyes. A spirit creature has a spirit body or organism: "There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body." (1 Corinthians 15:44) All of the host of heaven are spirit creatures and are invisible to human eyes. Such spirit creatures are designated under the names of "cherubim", "seraphim," and "angels". Among the spirit or angelic creation was one whom God named Lucifer. The universal organization of Jehovah God from the beginning of creation consisted of his spirit creatures, and over which Jehovah God was and is Supreme Lord and Ruler.

In due time it pleased God to create the earth, and he created it for his creature man, who was thereafter created. "I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded. For thus saith the Lord that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited; I am the Lord, and there is none else."—Isaiah 45:12, 18.

God created man in his own due time and called his name Adam, and placed him in Eden. "And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden, to dress it and to keep it" (Genesis 2:7, 15) God created the woman

and gave her to Adam for his wife. (Genesis 2: 22-24) Adam and his wife Eve were made a part of God's organization, and the man was given dominion over the creation of earth which was of the lower order than himself. Lucifer, the spirit creature, was the overseer of man and a certain portion of the spirit creation, and was made so by God's appointment. He was an officer in the organization of Jehovah, which organization of Jehovah God is designated under the symbol of "mountain". Concerning Lucifer it is written in the Bible: "Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; . . . Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so; thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire."—Ezekiel 28: 13, 14.

Lucifer, when made the overlord of man, was anointed or commissioned, receiving authority from God over man, and it was his duty to see that man performed his obligation unto God according to His law. The universal organization of Jehovah God then consisted of the Logos, and all the angelic or spirit creatures, and man on the earth; and all of that organization was in harmony with and obedient to God the Creator. Everything in the universe was in complete harmony.

The Almighty God Jehovah is the Unselfish One, and therefore, as it is written, "God is love." (1 John 4: 16) That means that God does nothing selfishly, but always for the good of his creatures. God is righteous and holy. "For righteous is Jehovah, righteousness he loveth, the

upright shall behold his face." (Psalm 11:7, *Rotherham*) "O Jehovah! in the heavens is thy lovingkindness, thy faithfulness as far as the fleecy clouds: thy righteousness is like mighty mountains, and thy just decrees are a great resounding deep,—man and beast thou savest, O Jehovah! How precious thy lovingkindness, O God! therefore the sons of men under the shadow of thy wings seek refuge." (Psalm 36: 5-7, *Roth.*) "Righteous art thou, O Lord, and upright are thy judgments." (Psalm 119: 137) "The Lord is righteous in all his ways, and holy in all his works." (Psalm 145: 17) "Thy righteousness is like the great mountains; thy judgments are a great deep; O Lord, thou preservest man and beast." (Psalm 36: 6) "Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth." (Psalm 119: 142) "God is light, and in him is no darkness at all." (1 John 1: 5) God can not and will not look with approval upon anything that is unrighteous. Necessarily all parts of Jehovah's organization were in harmony with him, and anything or any creature that got out of harmony with God would be expelled from his organization.

ORIGIN OF ENEMIES

Every unrighteous or wicked creature is God's adversary or enemy. Lucifer saw that every creature in the universe gave honor and praise to the Almighty God. Lucifer coveted that honor and praise for himself. To covet means to desire and to seek that which one has no right to have. Lucifer is called the covetous

their death. (Genesis 2: 17; Romans 6: 23) Lucifer must have known this law of God and the penalty for its violation. It was his duty to know, but apparently he did not believe it, and that belief was due to his own improper heart condition. He should have been governed by the Word of God, but, regarding himself as equal to the Most High and considering that he could with impunity induce man to violate God's law, he proceeded to do so. To Eve he said, in substance: 'Why do you not eat this fruit in the midst of the garden of Eden?' and Eve replied that God permitted them to eat of the fruit of many of the trees except the one fruit mentioned, and that God had said to them: "Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die."



Beginning of religion

one. (Jeremiah 51:13) Lucifer presumptuously regarded himself as equal to the Almighty God, and concerning that it is written: "O Lucifer, son of the morning [that is, of the early beginning of earth's creation, of which he had been appointed overlord]! how art thou cut down to the ground . . . ! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds: I will be like the Most High." (Isaiah 14:12-14) Another translation of this text reads: "How hast thou fallen from heaven, O Shining One, Son of the Dawn! Hewn down to the earth, O crusher of nations! Yet thou didst say in thy heart, The heavens will I ascend, above the stars of God will I lift up my throne, that I may sit in the Mount of Assembly, in the Recesses of the North: I will mount on the hills of the clouds, I will match the Most High!"—*Rotherham*.

Lucifer had meditated in his heart, that is to say, his motive was, to gain for himself the honor and praise of creatures to which he was not entitled. To accomplish his covetous design Lucifer did this: He approached the woman Eve and spoke to her deceitfully, and is likened unto the serpent, a beast that was in Eden. Any transgression of God's law is sin, and God had fixed death as the penalty for the commission of willful sin. Adam and Eve had been so instructed by the Lord, that sin would result in

their death. (Genesis 2: 17; Romans 6: 23) Lucifer must have known this law of God and the penalty for its violation. It was his duty to know, but apparently he did not believe it, and that belief was due to his own improper heart condition. He should have been governed by the Word of God, but, regarding himself as equal to the Most High and considering that he could with impunity induce man to violate God's law, he proceeded to do so. To Eve he said, in substance: 'Why do you not eat this fruit in the midst of the garden of Eden?' and Eve replied that God permitted them to eat of the fruit of any of the trees except the one fruit mentioned, and that God had said to them: "Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die."



Beginning of religion

ore he is designated in the Scriptures as "the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan". (Revelation 20: 2) He is the adversary or willful opposer of God, and therefore God's chief enemy and the enemy of man. While Satan is the arch enemy, there are many other enemies, as will be seen in the progress of this study.

Everything with God, and that proceeds from him, is light and truth. God is the giver of life everlasting. Everything with Satan, and that proceeds from him, is darkness, and the end hereof is death. In the final analysis it will be seen that each and every creature that gets life everlasting in happiness is and must be and remain on the side of the Almighty God, and that every creature that remains on the side of Satan shall be completely destroyed.

In the consideration of all matters herein-after discussed keep in mind this great truth, so wit: That the purpose of Satan the Devil is to reproach and mock Jehovah God, and to turn all creation against God, and to ultimately plunge all the creation into destruction. Should he be able to do this, he would regard himself as the victor; and that is his ambition. Satan the Devil is the great wicked one, and all who are with him and who continue with him are wicked; and the decree of the Almighty Creator is that all the wicked shall be destroyed: "The Lord preserveth all them that love him; but all the wicked will he destroy." (Psalm 145: 20) This truth coming to the attention of each and every creature, a choice must be made between

ANGELS

"The world" is the organization of creatures under the control of an overlord. As that term *world* relates to man, "the world" is the organization of men into tribes or governments operating under the influence and controlling power of an invisible overlord. Satan the Devil is the "god", mighty one or controlling power of the present-day wicked world, and his angels operate with him. (2 Corinthians 4:4) He having been appointed as overlord of man before his rebellion, God did not take away that overlordship when he sentenced Satan to death; and the reason therefore will appear as we progress.

At the time God pronounced judgment against Adam he used these words concerning the Devil: "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel." (Genesis 3:15) These words have both a literal and a symbolic application. The word "woman", as used in this text, symbolically refers to God's organization; and the words "her seed" symbolically refer to those creatures who devote themselves wholly to God and become a part of his holy, righteous organization. "The serpent," meaning deceiver, and one of the names of Satan the Devil, is here used symbolically, and his "seed" means, in symbolic phrase, all the creatures that become a part of Satan's organization. Every creature in the universe must become either a part of the organization of God or a part of the organization under the control of Satan. Satan and his seed



God, deceive mankind and attempt to destroy all who serve God. (Matthew 10:23; 12:24; Luke 11:15, 18, 19) All of those wicked ones are creatures of darkness, that is to say, wickedness, and they are the most effective enemies against those who serve the Almighty God, and that fight against God's servants; as it is written, to wit: "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." (Ephesians 6:12) The entire organization of Satan is arrayed against all righteousness, but in the end all are doomed to certain destruction. The reason why God has permitted their existence for so long a time will clearly appear to your satisfaction as this study progresses.

It is certain that in times past angels had the power to materialize, that is to say, to appear in human form or organism. That was true of the good angels, some of whom appeared to Abraham and others. (Genesis 18:1-15; 19:1, 15) Angels of the Lord appeared to other men who served Almighty God. (Judges 2:1; 6:12-6; 13:1-20) Those good and faithful angels were sent by the Almighty God to communicate his message to men on the earth. The wicked angels that operated from the time of the rebellion of Satan also had power to materialize, and they did so. Those wicked angels operated contrary to God's will, because they were against God and on the side of the Devil. They appeared on the earth as giants, and in the Scriptures

and who had power to materialize and did materialize and appear in human form. All the faithful angels are called "sons of God", because all such receive life through the Almighty God. (Job 38:7) Those sons of God who thus materialized were not a part of Satan's crowd at that time, because they were not the ones who joined Satan in his rebellion.

Bear in mind that, Satan being the adversary of God, his objective at all times is to turn all creatures, both men and angels, against God and cause them to curse God and bring reproach upon his name. (Job 2:1-5) The wicked angels work with Satan and are also deceivers. Fraud and deceit, used to entrap Eve, have ever been used to entrap others; and so his crowd of wicked angels resorted to fraud and deceit to mislead the angels above designated "the sons of God". The opportunity now appeared for Satan to entrap those sons of God who materialized and appeared as men. It is entirely probable that Satan began to work his fraud before those sons of God appeared in human form. As above stated, "the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair," that is, pleasing to the vision, yet they were imperfect. As Satan had used Eve to entrap Adam, so Satan pursued a similar course to use other women to deceive and defraud the "sons of God" above mentioned. Those materialized "sons of God", having themselves followed a righteous course up to that time, manifestly appeared as very handsome and attractive men and they would appear well in the eyes of these beautiful

righteousness, and by fraud and deceit induced them to believe that they could do great good to the human race by marrying those beautiful women. Satan and his coconspirators, the nephilim or giants, probably found it an easy matter to induce those handsome men to marry the beautiful women, and the result of those marriages was, children were born, which became "mighty men", "men of renown" for physical strength and appearance.

Up to that time, to wit, approximately 1500 years after the expulsion from Eden, there appear to have been only three men who had remained true and faithful to the Almighty God, and those men were, to wit, Abel, Enoch and Noah. (Hebrews 11:4-7) Adam, Cain, and others who were their descendants, were wicked men, and the result of the marriage of materialized spirit creatures with the women above mentioned was that all the offspring became wicked and reproached the name of God. It appeared, therefore, that Satan and his crowd were succeeding in turning men away from God. Only three men on the side of God and all others on the side of the Devil, it was a wicked and grossly rebellious generation and their every imagination was wickedness. Why should the Almighty God permit that wicked crowd to continue on earth? "And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually."—Genesis 6:5.

Jehovah God is that great Spirit, and the creatures on the earth are flesh and, as it is

written, "all flesh is grass." (Isaiah 31:3; 40:6) Creatures are wholly dependent upon God for life, and only those who remain in harmony with God will ever have life everlasting. "The grass withereth, the flower fadeth; because the spirit of the Lord bloweth upon it: surely the people is grass. The grass withereth, the flower fadeth; but the word of our God shall stand for ever."—Isaiah 40:7, 8.

The generation then upon the earth, aside from the three men above named, were fit only for destruction. Therefore God said of that wicked generation: "And the Lord said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years."—Genesis 6:3.

Why should God, the great Spirit, the holy, righteous One, continue to strive with man and permit him to reproach His holy name? He could instantly blot man out completely and start another race, but God declared his purpose to delay the execution of the wicked crowd that then inhabited the earth, for a period of 120 years. That wickedness on the earth grieved Jehovah God in his heart, and it is written: "And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart." (Genesis 6:6) The word "repented" there used does not mean that God had made a great mistake. The word *repent* means a change in the course of his dealing with his creatures. God therefore determined that he would 'ease himself of his adversaries' by destroying them. (Isaiah 1:24) His announced purpose was, how-

ver, to delay the execution of that judgment or 120 years. "And the Lord said, I will destroy man, whom I have created, from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteſt me that I have made them. But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord." (Genesis 6: 7, 8) The word "created" employed in this text and the word "destroyed" are in complete contrast with each other and disclose the meaning of the words "it repenteſt me". God the Creator had extended his loving-kindness to his creatures and had been long-suffering with them, and now he would destroy them because of their wickedness.

In the foregoing text (Genesis 6: 3) "an hundred and twenty years" are mentioned. But that period of time has no reference to the age limit of man thereafter. It appears from the record of God that the declaration concerning the 120 years was before the three sons of Noah, to wit, Shem, Ham and Japheth, were born, and that Noah lived on the earth for more than 400 years after that declaration was made. "And Noah lived after the flood three hundred and fifty years. And all the days of Noah were nine hundred and fifty years: and he died." (Genesis 9: 28, 29) What was the purpose in extending the time of destruction for 120 years longer instead of destroying the peoples of earth at that time? Within that 120 years Jehovah God caused to be delivered a witness to the peoples of earth, giving them full warning of his purpose to destroy the wicked. God never takes snap judg-

ment of anyone, but gives full and fair notice of his purpose. His righteous servant Noah, by the course of action which he took and by his verbal preaching within the hearing of the people, gave warning to all of God's purpose to destroy the living creatures of earth, all of which had turned to wickedness. (1 Peter 3:20; 2 Peter 2:5) What Jehovah God here did foreshadowed another great event, which is now in course of fulfillment.

God informed Noah of his purpose to destroy the earth, and directed Noah to build an ark wherein Noah and his family and certain beasts should be taken, saved and carried over the flood. "The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth. And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with violence through them: and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth. Make thee an ark of gopher wood: rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch."—Genesis 6:11-14.

Within that period of 120 years Noah built the ark and, while so doing, continued to give warning to the people of the coming execution of the judgment of Jehovah God, but the people gave no heed to that warning. Under the supervision of the wicked one they continued to reproach God's name. The act of Noah in building the ark was a testimony to the men on the earth and a complete testimony of Noah's

faith in God, and hence his course of action was a condemnation of all wickedness. "By faith Noah, being warned of God concerning things not seen as yet [such things as rain, water-spouts, great storms, floods; and which things came with the deluge], moved with godly fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; through which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is according to faith."—Hebrews 11:7, *American Revised Version*.

Of course, the action taken by Noah, as well as his words, would be a witness to men and to angels, and thus he preached to both, even as the true followers of Christ have since done. (1 Corinthians 4:9) In addition to giving full and fair warning to those flesh creatures then on earth the Almighty God was making a prophetic picture showing the destruction of the entire organization of Satan, that is, all His enemies, at the end of the world, and this is shown by the words of Jesus Christ, who said: "But as the days of No'e were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that No'e entered into the ark, and knew not, until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be."—Matthew 24:37-39.

As Noah gave warning at the command of God, so also the Lord God commands his faithful ones on the earth, at the second coming of Christ, to give full warning by preaching this

gospel of his kingdom' as a witness to the world and to do this just preceding the time of the complete destruction of the world at Armageddon.—Matthew 24: 14, 21.

WHO PERISHED,
 The judgments of Jehovah God are always executed as written. Note that his judgment written concerning the wickedness in the days of Noah says this: "And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, . . . And the Lord said, I will destroy man . . . The end of all flesh is come." "Both man, and beast, . . . and, behold, I will destroy them." (Genesis 6: 5, 7, 13) All flesh creatures upon the earth, except Abel, Enoch and Noah, at the time this judgment was written, had brought reproach upon God's name. The offspring of the daughters of men and the materialized sons of God were flesh, all of which were an abomination to God and grossly wicked. The men of that union between the daughters above mentioned and the sons of God" were called "mighty men" Hebrew: *Gibbor*, that is, "powerful"), "men of own." They were mighty or powerful before other human creatures, but not before Almighty. Before him they were an abomination. The judgment of God was against them, and they destroyed in the flood. There would be no reason why they should be kept alive; because written: "The wicked shall perish." (Psalm 9) The mighty flood of waters came, and

concerning the result thereof it is written: "And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth, and every man. And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark."—Genesis 7: 21, 23.



Religion causes world destruction

What became of the "sons of God" that materialized as men and then married women? Those angels called "sons of God" were originally a part of God's organization, and it was their duty to be faithful to God and serve him continuously. They yielded to the wiles or influence of the Devil and his associates in wickedness. They permitted themselves to be led into

a course entirely out of harmony with the Almighty God. They were therefore no longer shielded nor had God's protection, but became subject to what the Devil might do to them. This rule is clearly shown by the record appearing in God's Word.—Hosea 11:8; Jeremiah 12:7; Isaiah 47:6.

What, then, did the Devil do with those sons of God, if anything? The Scriptures show that those spirit creatures were imprisoned. Where were they imprisoned, and who imprisoned them? Manifestly Satan and his bullies, the nephilim, imprisoned them, and their place of imprisonment is somewhere in Magog. Later Jesus preached to those imprisoned spirits concerning God's purpose; as it is written: "By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison; which sometime [aforetime (*Revised Version*)] were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls, were saved by water."—1 Peter 3:19, 20.

Those creatures were not destroyed in the flood; for the reason that they were not included in the judgment concerning all flesh, and long after the flood Jesus preached to them. During the 120 years aforementioned Noah, the preacher of righteousness", had preached to them and they had not heeded his preaching, all for that reason they remained under the power and influence of the Devil and, when the flood broke upon the earth, they found no provision given to them by the Lord God, and the

evil imprisoned them in the expectation of keeping them always away from God. They had heard the preaching of Noah; and the fact that he preached to them and that Jesus later preached to them shows that there is a possibility of their receiving forgiveness and returning to God's favor, and Satan would imprison them in order to prevent them from returning to God; and it appears that their imprisonment in the land of Magog. (Ezekiel 38:2; 39:6) Satan and his bullies would hold those creatures in restraint so they could not again present themselves unto God. The record shows that thereafter Satan presented himself before the Lord God, but his angels did not appear. Again there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them to present himself before the Lord."—Job 2:1.

Since one of the purposes of preaching the truth is to afford creatures an opportunity to repent and come into harmony with God, the fact that Jesus preached to those spirits in prison supports the conclusion that there may be an opportunity for them to be recovered and come back into harmony with God. Being held in prison by Satan would not necessarily mean that they are 'the seed of Satan', but that those who repent and reform according to God's law might be thus saved. That would mean that in due time they would have to take a positive and determined stand against Satan and Gog and all the wicked crowd and declare themselves wholly on God's side. (For a fuller statement

of this matter, and as to how Jesus preached to them, see the small book entitled *Angels*.)

WILLFULLY WICKED ANGELS

What became of the nephilim or giants, the willfully wicked angels that appeared on earth prior to the flood, and where are they now? The Scriptures, when carefully examined, give answer to this question. Those wicked angels joined Satan in his rebellion and materialized prior to the flood as giants in the earth. They were not included in the judgment of God concerning those who should be destroyed in the flood; for the reason, they had, together with Satan, been previously sentenced to death, and their execution deferred to a later date, as will be seen as progress is made in this study. The judgment of complete destruction was long ago entered against Satan and those other willfully wicked ones, and states that, when it is executed against Satan, "never shalt thou be any more." (Ezekiel 28: 19) Those angels are spirit creatures that willingly joined Satan in the rebellion, are likewise maliciously wicked, and are held there for everlasting destruction, together with Satan. (Matthew 25: 41) At that time all the wicked shall perish. (Psalm 37: 20) Concerning those wicked angels it is written: "Whose judgment of old [now from of old (A.R.V.)] does not linger, and their destruction does not slumber." (2 Peter 2: 3, *Emphatic Diaglott*) The apostle who wrote those words directs his speech to the time of the end of the world; and now that time has come, and for that reason,

the judgment of those willfully wicked angels does not linger, but will be executed at Armageddon, which is in the near future.

Furthermore, it is written concerning those willfully wicked angels: "For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment" (2 Peter 2:4) According to another translator of this text it reads: "For if God did not spare the angels who sinned, but having confined them in Tartarus with chains of thick darkness, delivered them over into custody for judgment." (2 Peter 2:4, *Diaglott*) The record shows that those angels were sentenced to death long before the flood. The word "hell", in this text, is from the Greek *tartarus*, and that word means or signifies great debasement of degradation. It is the same debasement to which Lucifer was reduced when he became the Devil. Those wicked angels were a part of Satan's original organization when he was Lucifer, and they joined him in his rebellion. "Chains of darkness" does not mean literally iron chains, but means that which restrains them in darkness concerning the understanding of Jehovah and his purpose and for ever excludes them from his favor, which favor is light, and the contrary of which is thick darkness. It is written that in the light of God there is life; and therefore the "chains of darkness" is the very opposite and would mean complete death or destruction. Those angels before the rebellion were a part of God's universal organization, and when they joined the rebel-

lion they cut themselves off for ever from his favor. Such clearly appears to be God's righteous rule concerning all who give themselves over to the Devil in wickedness. The Lord declares that he will gather out the workers of lawlessness and cast them "into outer darkness".—Matthew 25:30.

Satan is the chief of devils, and that means that there are many other devils; and they all are designated in the Scriptures under these terms, to wit: "principalities," "powers," "rulers of the darkness," 'a host of wicked ones in unseen places.' (Ephesians 6: 12, margin) All of such are enemies of God and are all the enemies of those who serve the Almighty God.

Those wicked angels are alive and continue to carry on their devilish work within their restrained realm, and particularly among those who know not and who do not serve the Almighty God. The original estate or place of habitation of such was God's organization with Lucifer, and when they, together with Lucifer, rebelled against God, they were degraded, which degradation is called "chains of darkness". "And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains, under darkness, unto the judgment of the great day." (Jude 6) This is in harmony with the following scripture: "The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished."—2 Peter 2:9.

The great day of judgment is the period of time within which Christ Jesus, the Executive

Officer of Jehovah, executes judgment, and which will be considered in another chapter of this book. The "chains" have no reference to literal chains, but do mean that those who are thus restrained are removed from God's light and favor and are in the darkness concerning his purpose, except that they know that they are judged for destruction; but doubtless the Devil tries to convince them otherwise. When Jesus was on the earth, and when he found those wicked spirit creatures afflicting men, he rebuked them, and they cried out: "What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before [our] time?"—Matthew 8:29; Luke 4:34.

A C T I V I T Y

The Devil and his angels have been active from the time of the rebellion at Eden until now, and will continue active until their destruction at Armageddon. As Satan "that old Serpent" is the arch deceiver, also all his wicked angels are deceivers, and the undisputed evidence shows that they continue to deceive men. They operate by gaining control of the mind of man and thereby compel or lead man to commit wrongful acts. When one undertakes to serve Almighty God and thereafter becomes unfaithful, he is easily a victim for those wicked spirit creatures. A striking example is that recorded concerning Saul, who was selected as the first king of Israel. The Israelites asked to have a king, and God yielded to their demands and permitted them to have Saul. The Almighty

God gave a specific command to Saul that he must perform a certain duty, and Saul, although attempting it, deliberately failed, and because thereof he fell into the snare of the Devil and his wicked angels. It is written in God's Word: "The fear of man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe." —Proverbs 29: 25.

When Saul the king was confronted by God's faithful prophet Samuel, Saul said: "I have transgressed the commandment of the Lord, . . . because I feared the people, and obeyed their voice." (1 Samuel 15: 21) Such is the unbreakable rule with men who fear other men; and for that reason they disobey God and fall into Satan's snare. The Lord God withdrew his favor and protection from Saul; then the Devil and his angels got complete control of Saul's mind and caused him to make numerous attempts thereafter to commit murder. Saul then sought out the witch of Endor, a medium through whom the wicked spirits communicated with human creatures, and Saul consulted that wicked one. "Then said Saul unto his servants, Seek me a woman that hath a familiar spirit, that I may go to her, and inquire of her. And his servants said to him, Behold, there is a woman that hath a familiar spirit at Endor." (1 Samuel 28: 7) This is proof that witches and familiar spirits were and are enemies of God and man and that they gain control of the mind of man and turn men away from God. On that occasion the wicked spirit further deceived Saul by inducing him to believe that Samuel, who had lived

previous to that time and died, was still alive. Samuel, being dead, could not communicate with anyone alive, but the wicked spirits induced Saul so to believe. (Ecclesiastes 9:5, 10) In due time Saul died the enemy of God because he had feared man and had become unfaithful to God and fallen away entirely to the Devil. (1 Samuel 28:7-20; 31:4, 5) Witchcraft has been practiced from the time of Saul even to the present day.

WITCHCRAFT

Witches are those creatures who yield themselves as instruments for use by the Devil and his angels and permit themselves to be employed as mediums for communication between wicked spirits and men on the earth. Witchcraft is of the Devil and is the fruit of rebellion. Satan the rebel invented witchcraft, and he and his wicked spiritual allies employ and practice witchcraft to deceive human creatures. When Saul had disobeyed God, the prophet of the Lord said to Saul: "For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, he hath also rejected thee from being king." —1 Samuel 15:23.

Saul had followed Satan's course and had rebelled against God's commandment and committed the sin of witchcraft. Furthermore, God's law expressly prohibited the practice of witchcraft because it is of the Devil: "Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live." (Exodus 22:18) "There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the

lium to get into communication, as they suppose, with their dead friends, who the mediums are alive. Such deceived persons hear voices which purport to come from those who have died, but in fact the voices that are heard are the voices of wicked spirits who joined in originally in his rebellion and who are degraded ones in darkness, and who come to practice fraud upon unsuspecting persons that do not trust in Jehovah God; and they issue to reproach God's name by keeping up Satan's lie, to wit, 'There is no death.'

This is an absolute fact, not subject to dispute—that none of the wicked angels can communicate with any man who is wholly devoted to God and who continues faithful unto the God. That of itself is proof that all supposed communication with the dead is the opinion of the enemies of God and man for the purpose of deceiving man and reproaching God's name. The purpose of those enemies is to turn away from God by inducing them to believe the Devil's lie and the associated lies of "purgatory" and eternal torment, which are built up upon Satan's lie. It is apparent, therefore, that the religious organizations that teach doctrines of purgatory and eternal torture, that the dead are alive, are operating under the powerful and deceptive influence of the Devil and his wicked angels.

The practice of witchcraft has been carried on for ages and is practiced to this very day. In the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries a wave of witchcraft swept over Europe

testimony of those men, and their pleas of guilt and their execution upon their own statements, have greatly mystified people all over the world, and the public press and radio speakers have repeatedly been asked to state the reason therefor, and all have failed to state the reason because they have either deliberately ignored or are totally ignorant of the Word of God. Those men of Russia, who thus pleaded guilty and were executed, were, without a question of doubt, victims who had fallen under the control of the wicked angels, and had pursued a course similar to that followed by King Saul when he fell under the wicked one's influence. Those wicked angels injected into the minds of those poor men the delusion that they were guilty, and induced them to confess crimes of which they were entirely innocent.

Another instance of the operation of those wicked spirits is this, to wit: On the night of February 27, 1933, the building of the German Reichstag was burned, and that could open the way for Hitler and his crowd to gain complete control of Germany, which they gained immediately thereafter. That crime of arson brought about exactly what the Nazis desired. The Nazis themselves burned the building and then laid the crime at the door of political foes, many of whom were arrested. A Hollander named Van der Lubbe, described by the press as a half-wit, was arrested, together with several Communists, and charged with the crime of burning the Reichstag. John Gunther, an American journalist, was present at and reported the trial

of the man. In his book *Inside Europe* are printed the facts, and from which the following is quoted, to wit:

"Van der Lubbe, a typical enough contemptible product of modern civilization, was not only weak minded; he had a deep grievance against society and authority, which his feeble brain sought to remedy by pyromania. He was a chronic arsonist. A homeless vagrant, wandering in the Berlin slums, he set several fires, and in his thick manner boasted about them. And Nazis heard him. The further facts revealed are that the Nazis had arranged for Van der Lubbe to be in the building with fire material so that they could make him appear as the guilty one. The fire that destroyed the building was the chemical fire set by the Nazis, who carried their material through the Goering tunnel, and timed it to go off at just that moment Van der Lubbe thought he set the fire. Lubbe retreated from the building in proud triumph and was arrested by the police, and that was what the Nazis had planned. Lubbe was an obvious victim of maniacal depressive psychosis." Furthermore the authority above cited says: "The court was terrified every time Lubbe opened his mouth." Lubbe was put on the witness stand and admitted that he fired the building. He confessed to physical facts impossible for him to have committed. "He was proud of his fire. He resented it deeply when anyone was put forward to share the credit of it." The public has been mystified about that fire since. What is the real explanation? With-

out any question of doubt Van der Lubbe was the victim of the wicked spirits described aforesaid, which wicked spirits had gained control of his mind and made him believe that he was the one who burned the building. Those wicked spirits produce insanity in anyone who yields to their influence.

There are numerous other instances of the operation of these wicked spirits in their attempt to seize control of the minds of men and plunge them into a desperate condition leading to destruction. Recently there has come an affliction upon the laboring element of the nations, and which is expressed in what is called "sit-down strikes". Such has been a mystery to many persons, and is yet. The fact is that the same devilish crowd that operated the Nazis in Germany and conspired to have a weak-minded man to confess to their crime likewise is operating upon the minds of men to produce a situation mystifying to the people and in an endeavor to bring about a destruction of the nations and the people.

From the time of the flood until now the Devil and his associated wicked spirits have been actively exercising power over men and nations. Just now, in the year 1937, that crowd of wicked spirits have gained a greater control over rulers and the people of the various nations than at any other time since the flood, and this will appear from the undisputed and unimpeachable evidence as the examination of the facts concerning the enemies progresses. Without any question of doubt the dictators in the various

nations of the world today are under the influence of those wicked spirits. The object or purpose of those wicked ones is to carry out the Devil's purpose from the beginning, which is to try to defame or reproach the name of Almighty God, and to turn the people away from Almighty God and to plunge them into destruction. To appreciate the great crisis in the affairs of the nations, which is now upon all the nations, it is necessary to consider the evidence of the activity of those wicked spirits from the time of the flood to the present time, and particularly as the same relates to the governing powers of the nations of the earth. As this evidence is examined the reason for the present-day perils will readily appear to all sincere, unprejudiced and honest persons.

CHAPTER III

RELIGION

"The way of the wicked is an abomination unto the Lord."
—Proverbs 15: 9.

THE ALMIGHTY GOD brought the first world to an end by the great deluge, which destroyed all flesh upon the earth, including the offspring of the union of the "sons of God" with the "daughters of men". The only survivors were those in the ark: "And [God] spared not the old world, but saved Noah, the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly." (2 Peter 2: 5) Those who were destroyed were wicked and an abomination in the sight of Jehovah God. There were left on earth Noah and his three sons and four other persons of Noah's family. The "sons of God" that married human wives were 'imprisoned' by Satan, and the wicked angels that joined Satan originally in his rebellion were remanded to a degraded condition and habitation. The Devil had not been deprived of his power, and the reason will be seen as progress is made in this study.

Another world came into existence immediately following the flood, and that world persists to this day; and most persons believe that it will continue for ever; but in this they err. The world consists of heaven and earth, the

sisted of Noah and his three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth, and the other members of Noah's household. "And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth." (Genesis 9:1) "Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah: Shem, Ham, and Japheth; and unto them were sons born after the flood." (Genesis 10:1) The human race then began to multiply.

SANCTITY OF LIFE

Immediately after Noah left the ark Jehovah God made known his covenant concerning the sanctity of life. (Genesis 9:9-11) A covenant is a solemn and unbreakable declaration of God's purpose. God would have all creation to know that life is a gift from him and that no one can properly take or destroy life without the permission of God. The beasts of the field and the fowls of the air God has provided for man that he may use them for food as he may require. (Genesis 9:2-4) If any man, contrary to the law of God, kills another man, the killer is guilty of murder and must suffer death. (Genesis 9:6) Also the wanton and needless slaying of animals is a violation of God's everlasting covenant. (Genesis 9:4,5) If a man kills beasts for his necessary food, such is lawful; but if he kills them merely to satisfy a selfish desire to slay or to gratify his desire for sport, that is a violation of the everlasting covenant concerning the sanctity of life.

The covenant having been announced, the Devil saw an opportunity to further reproach

the name of God by causing man to violate that everlasting covenant concerning the sanctity of life. This violation began to be manifested particularly in Nimrod. The man Nimrod was a descendant of Noah's son Ham. "Nimrod . . . began to be a mighty [man] in the earth." The word translated "mighty" in this text (Genesis 10: 8) is the same word translated "mighty" relating to the offspring of the marriage of the spirit creatures with the daughters of men (Genesis 6: 4) "He was a mighty hunter before the Lord: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the Lord." (Genesis 10: 9) Nimrod was ambitious, warlike and blood-thirsty, and reveled in wicked deeds, and was undoubtedly induced to do so by reason of the influence of the Devil and his associate demons. Nimrod hunted and killed wild beasts merely to satisfy his wicked desires, and he armed and trained young men to follow him in the killing business, and in the eyes of the people Nimrod became one greatly admired and worshiped because of his prowess. No doubt the Devil put that into the minds of the people, that they would show their devotion to a creature rather than to the Creator. It is written of Nimrod that he was "a mighty hunter before [that is], superior to or greater than]" the Almighty God. The honor, plaudits and adoration bestowed upon Nimrod was worship, and there began the practice of religion following the flood. Religion is a form of worship bestowed by creatures upon another, the one worshiped being regarded by such creatures as superior to them.

selves and worthy of adoration and worship. The Devil had gained control of the mind of Cush, the father of Nimrod, and had used Cush, the son of Ham, as a ringleader in turning the increasing population away from Jehovah God. Nimrod, his son, together with others, was trained to violate God's everlasting covenant and to establish creature worship, and this was for the purpose of diverting the minds of creatures away from the Almighty God. By this means Satan and his associate devils defied the Almighty God and reproached his name, and thereby set up the practice of religion in the earth. Let this be remembered and kept in mind henceforth: Religion has ever been the chief instrument employed by the Devil to reproach the name of Almighty God and turn the people away from the Most High.

Politics is the means and art of organizing and governing the people in order to control organizations of men. Religion, having been organized and put into operation to turn the people away from God and to the worship of creatures, was quickly followed by politics, that is, an organization amongst men to control and rule the people. Nimrod, the religionist, took the lead in politics, he being made the ruler or king. "And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel." (Genesis 10:10) Nimrod and his religious and political associates built cities, into which the people were gathered, and that was the beginning of trade or commerce, trafficking amongst each other. From that day to this, religion, politics and commerce have been operated

the tower of Babel, which means "the gate to God"; therefore a religion of the Devil was at that point brought forward to defy the Almighty God. Doubtless because of that organized movement in setting up a religion God interfered and brought about a confusion of the language of the people, and hence the Hebrew word for *Babel* means "confusion". From the very beginning God expressed his indignation against religion, showing that it is an abomination in his sight because formulated, brought into existence and practiced by the Devil. Nothing else has brought about so much confusion among the people as the many kinds of religions that are practiced among them. From and after the flood until now religion has been the chief means of confusing, deceiving and misleading the people and has resulted in turning them away from the knowledge of and worship of the true and almighty God. This of itself is proof conclusive that religion is the product of the Devil, employed specifically to deceive the people and to turn them away from Jehovah. Religion causes the people to be very superstitious and to yield to the influence of their religious leaders, and that opens clearly the way for politicians to gain control of and rule the people, and for the use of commerce or traffic by which the people are robbed of their just rights and earnings.

Bab-el and Babylon mean the same thing. Babylon is the name of the Devil's organization, which combines three elements, religion, politics and commerce, to control the peoples of the earth. Religion is employed for selfish

been that of those who serve him. Religion is used for that purpose, that is, that the Devil might gain the devotion of creatures to anything, particularly to himself, and thereby turn them away from God.

Following the organization of Babylon other organized nations came into existence, to wit: Egypt, Assyria, Persia, Greece, Rome, and others. All of such great world powers and all subdivisions thereof, or nations which have formed and do form any part thereof, have had and practiced and do have and practice religion. Babylon is the mother of all religions, and the Devil is the father thereof. All religions properly take the name of Babylon. The Devil is the great enemy or adversary of God, and his religion therefore is an enemy of the Almighty God. The Devil is man's worst enemy, and his religion is likewise a deadly enemy to man. The Devil's organization is symbolized by an unchaste or impure woman, which is called "Babylon". Therefore all religions are of Babylon, and particularly the leading religion known in the lands called "Christendom".

All the nations, kindreds and peoples on the earth since the flood have had and practiced, and do continue to have and practice, some form of religion, and each and every one has been made so to do by the wily influence of that wicked one, the Devil, and his associate wicked spirits. It is therefore written in the Bible of and concerning Babylon that 'she has made all the nations drunk with the wine of her fornication'. (Revelation 14:8) "And upon her fore-

dried up that Noah died (Genesis 9: 28, 29), and during that time the descendants of Noah increased rapidly. Almost all the people had by that time fallen under the influence and control of Satan and the other devils. Two years after the death of Noah Abraham was born. Abraham was then residing in the land of Ur of the Chaldees. He loved and served the Almighty God. When he was seventy-five years old, at the command of Almighty God he moved into Canaan: "Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee; and I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: and I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee; and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. So Abram departed, as the Lord had spoken unto him; and Lot went with him: and Abram was seventy and five years old when he departed out of Haran."—Genesis 12: 1-4.

He went there to be a witness for Jehovah. Since the rebellion at Eden God has had some faithful witnesses on the earth, although very few in number, compared to earth's population. God began to make known that no man would have his blessing unless that man had faith in God and obeyed his commandments, and so He began to preach or proclaim the gospel unto Abraham. "And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, say-

ing, In thee shall all nations be blessed. So then they which be of faith are blessed with faith. Abraham."—Galatians 3:8, 9.

Abraham was a preacher of the truth, and hence a witness for Jehovah God. In due time there was born to Abraham and his wife Sarah a son named Isaac. With Abraham and Isaac God began to reveal by means of prophetic pictures his purpose to send to the earth his own beloved Son Jesus, who is the real heir of promise and he who would prove to be the faithful and true witness of Jehovah, and who would be offered up as a sacrifice to provide the price of redemption for man, to the end that those who would have faith in God and Christ Jesus might escape the wiles of the Devil and find everlasting life. (Genesis 22: 1-18) God has developed and carried out his purpose according to his sovereign will, and his purpose is certain to be accomplished even as he has declared it. (Isaiah 46: 11) It will be observed from this point forward that at every stage of man's history religion has been used to oppose God, and particularly to deceive mankind.

The nation of Egypt was, in the days of Abram, a powerful nation. That nation practiced the Devil religion the same as did the peoples of Babylon. Egypt was a great, commercial and military nation and was ruled by a king the title of whom was Pharaoh, meaning "Great He-roe".

Jacob was a grandson of Abraham, a true servant of God, one of the faithful patriarchs, and under the command and direction of the Almighty God he moved with his descendants

in Egypt and resided there for some years. I changed the name of Jacob to Israel, and thereafter the descendants of Jacob were known as Israelites or Hebrews. (Genesis 32:28; 40:15) Egyptians, who practiced the Devil religion, me, under the rule of a harsh Pharaoh, made Hebrews their slaves and greatly oppressed them. (Exodus 1: 11-14) Pharaoh, the ruler and representative of the Devil on earth, ordered all the male children of the Hebrews to be killed. Moses was born, and his parents hid him, and the babe was found by the daughter of Pharaoh and was reared in the royal house. (Exodus 2: 6-10; Hebrews 11: 23-28; Acts 7: 22.) because of his zeal for Jehovah and his people. Moses, when he grew to manhood's estate, compelled to flee from Egypt in order to remain faithful to God, and he went and dwelt in the land of Midian. While in that land God tested Moses and sent him into Egypt as the deliverer of his people. The Hebrews had refused to yield to the Devil religion practiced in Egypt, and held to the promise made to their father Abraham, and therefore the Egyptians, at the direction of the Devil and his angels, continued to increase the burden and oppression upon the Israelites. Their burdens grew heavier, and God heard their cries, and he sent Moses down to Egypt to act as their leader and deliverer from the hand of the oppressor. As while in Midian, and when Moses was tested, that God revealed himself to Moses as "I AM", that is, the self-existing One, the one who was or will be, but the One

who is, I AM, without beginning and without end. He revealed himself to Moses by His name JEHOVAH, which means his purpose toward those who love and serve him.—Exodus 6:3.

When Moses appeared before Pharaoh he told him that Jehovah God had commanded that Pharaoh should let the Hebrews leave Egypt, and Pharaoh replied: "Who is [Jehovah], that I should obey his voice?" (Exodus 5:2) This is cited as a further proof that Pharaoh was the official representative of the Devil and the enemy of Jehovah God. Then followed the afflictions upon Egypt, which followed in the way of plagues, that the Egyptian might be fully warned of his power and His purpose; and time and again, because of the plagues, Pharaoh agreed to let the people go, but refused when the time came for them to go. Then God sent the last plague, that is, the plague of the slaying of the firstborn of Egypt. When the firstborn died, then Pharaoh permitted the Israelites to leave Egypt. Moses led the Israelites out of Egypt and by God's grace took them dry-shod over the Red sea, and when Pharaoh's army attempted to follow and to destroy the Hebrews they were drown'd in the sea. (Exodus 14: 21-31) That Jehovah God there send a part of the estate faithfully to partake in his own destruction to completely destroy the Devil and all of his forces, is the truth and truth's here in it. In order that it may set a mark of grace of God, it is well to say again that the Devil is the enemy against the people.

THE BIBLE

How may it be known for a certainty that what is cited in the foregoing is true and wholly trustworthy? The answer is, because those facts are recorded in the Bible, which is the Word of God, and which is the truth. Did the people who lived on the earth prior to the time of Moses have the Bible? No; because Moses himself wrote the first five books of the Bible at the dictation of Jehovah God. Prior to that time God had communicated with his faithful men on earth by and through his angels. (Genesis 18: 1-33; 19: 1, 15) God spoke to Moses and gave him instruction what he should do when he went into Egypt. God made a covenant with the Hebrews just before they left Egypt, and he used Moses as spokesman and mediator for that purpose. When the Hebrews or Israelites reached Mount Sinai after leaving Egypt, God there confirmed his covenant with them, giving to them his fundamental law. (Exodus 19: 1-20) He also delivered to them through Moses his divers statutes. God commanded Moses what to write, and he wrote as he was commanded, and thus came into existence the first five books of the Bible.

The record of Jehovah shows that God created man in his own image and likeness and that he made the earth for the habitation of man (Isaiah 45: 12, 18) and that he instructed the first man what he should do in order to maintain his integrity and proper standing before the Lord. The Devil rebelled, together with a horde of wicked angels, which crowd of wicked ones as-

32

itable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction,
for instruction in righteousness; that the man
of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto
all good works." (2 Timothy 3: 16, 17) This pub-
lication attempts to put the Bible in a simple
way before the people who want to know the
truth. It is not expected it will be appreciated
or used by others. The Scriptures contain the
Word of God, and the same is true and is the
proper guide for the man who wants to know
and to do what is right. "Thy word is a lamp
unto my feet, and a light unto my path. Thy
word is true from the beginning; and every one
of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever.
I rejoice at thy word, as one that findeth great
treasure. I hate and abhor lying; but thy law do
I love." — Psalm 119: 105, 162, 163.

Jesus, the perfect One, testified concerning
God's Word as written in the Bible, and said:
"Thy word is truth" (John 17: 17) Let no man
conclude, however, that the mere possession of
the Bible or an occasional reading over texts
thereof is sufficient to enable him to be wise.
Many persons say "I have the Bible and know
what it teaches"; and yet they are entirely ignor-
ant of what it contains, and of the meaning
thereof. The Bible is the greatest storehouse of
knowledge and wisdom. A man who desires to
know the truth must study the Bible and he
study to show him. If approved of God, and
not be ashamed to acknowledge to all that he
gives that is present from the Almighty God
(2 Timothy 2: 15) A weak person is one who
has no honest desire to learn; and if an-
other

man applies himself in God's appointed way he is certain to learn, as it is written: "The meek will he guide in judgment, and the meek will he teach his way. All the paths of the Lord are mercy and truth unto such as keep his covenant and his testimonies."—Psalms 25:9, 10.

Many religious clergymen deny the Bible. And why? Because they are not men of God, but are on the Devil's side. All high class critics are in this class. Such men are wise in their own conceits and desire to shine in the eyes of other men and have the honor and praise which properly belongs to the Almighty God, and thus show themselves in the Devil's company. They possess worldly wisdom, as it is written: "For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men."—1 Corinthians 1:19, 20, 25.

The opinion of a man is of no value whatsoever if that opinion expressed is contrary to the Word of God. If you follow the teachings of men you are certain to remain in darkness. All men are by nature imperfect, and men grow in knowledge and wisdom only when they seek to know and to do the will of God; and for that reason the man who denies the Bible as the inspired Word of God is a foolish person, whether that man be a clergymen or a hypocrite. To trust in the opinion of man is folly and leads

E N E M I E S

to certain destruction. "Put not your trust in princes, nor in the son of man, in whom there is no help." (Psalm 146:3) But to learn of and trust in and follow God's direction leads to life and happiness. Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths." (Proverbs 3:5,6) "And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent." (John 17:3) If a man chooses to know the truth, then he must prove all things by the Word of God, which is true, and must hold fast that which is in harmony with the Word of God. All things else are on the side of man's enemy.—1 Thessalonians 5:21.

The Devil is the prince of darkness, and he puts forth his temptations to keep the people in ignorance of the truth and the desire to hold them in darkness. Why don't the people study, educated, try to be with the Word, in study, and understand it? the Devil, why have they in their hearts the pride of their congregation to refuse to read scriptures that expound the Word? Why do they tell the people to destroy books, such as the Bible, because they are the weapons of anti-christianity? of the Devil, who is it they are in error of that last of Matthew 12:32? For all he has done is it not to move the world? for the Devil is not at him. (Matthew 12:32) For all he has done, they desire to keep the people in ignorance so that the clergy may hold the people in affection to themselves, derive the honor or

plaudits of the people, and also the financial support that comes by reason of the influence they have over the people.

WHY THE DEVIL LIVES

In that long period of time from Eden to Mount Sinai, when the Israelites gathered there at God's command, the Devil and his angels opposed God and oppressed and afflicted all men who had tried to do right and serve God, and the Devil had succeeded in turning most of the human race away from God. Even Moses and Aaron found themselves in a jam because of the influence exercised over the people by Satan and his angels. The Devil had inflicted great punishment upon the Israelites when in Egypt, and now God had delivered them and they stood at the foot of Mount Sinai to receive the law from God's hand, that they might be shielded from the Devil's attack. While Moses was in the mountain receiving the law at the hands of God, the Devil overreached the Israelites and caused them to turn to idolatry or religious worship. Many have asked, and still ask, Why did not God kill the Devil then or before that time and spare men from his oppressive hand and his wicked deception? The Devil and his wicked angels continue to operate even to this very day, filling the earth with violence, and the people with dread. Why does the just and loving God permit the Devil to remain alive and carry on his wickedness?

The answer is given in brief at this point, and then the proof will follow, to wit: Because

the Devil declared his ability to turn all men away from God, and he challenged God to put a man on the earth who would remain true and faithful to Jehovah when put to the test by the Devil. That challenge put at issue the righteous name and word of the Almighty God. The effect of the challenge was to declare that Jehovah God is not supreme, he is not all-powerful. God could have killed the Devil immediately. But suppose he had killed him and his wicked angels at the time of the rebellion or at the time of the flood, and before the Devil had been given a chance to oppress the Israelites, what would have been the result? It could have been given the said then that the Devil had not been given the opportunity to prove who is supreme. The question of supremacy would not have been settled in the minds of other creatures. If one creature could defeat God, then the foundation for faith and obedience in God would be for ever shaken. The Lord God would give the Devil a full opportunity to prove his challenge before settling the question for ever.

Pharaoh was the Devil's representative in Egypt and had defied Jehovah by raising the question: "Who is [Jehovah], that I should obey his voice?" The Devil himself had openly defied Jehovah. Then God caused Moses to write down in His sacred Book the reason why Jehovah permitted the Devil and his angels to carry on their wickedness and why he has not yet destroyed them; and that declaration, which is the answer to the foregoing question, is this: "If for this cause have I allowed thee to remain

in order to show thee my power; and in order that they may proclaim my name throughout all the earth." (Exodus 9:16, *Leeser*) The declaration applied to the Devil specifically and to his then representative on the earth, Pharaoh, the ruler of the chief world power.

Stated in common phrase, the Almighty God declared he would permit Satan and his associated devils to have all the rope possible and a free hand to put forth their very strenuous efforts against Him; that in his own due time he would show his adversaries his supreme power by destroying them and all their supporters, and their works of wickedness; that before destroying them he would cause his own name and his supremacy to be declared throughout the earth, to the end that the enemies might have full warning and notice of their coming destruction, and that the people of good will toward God might be warned and flee from Satan, and take their stand on the side of Jehovah God, and find protection and security. That question at issue must be fully and completely determined for ever in favor of Jehovah God in order that his name and word be vindicated. Such is the reason why God permitted the wicked ones to continue in the earth, and he gives his sure word that in due time he will completely destroy all of them. Now the time has come for his name to be declared throughout all the earth, and for that reason these great truths are now being brought to the attention of the people, by the Lord's grace.

ah, that most of them had gone with the Devil, and that if the Devil had a chance he could make them all forsake God. That was a defiant challenge to Jehovah God, and he accepted the challenge. Job was rich in earthly goods and surrounded by a happy family and enjoyed good health, peace and quietness. The Devil declared that if those things were taken away from him he would curse God to his face. In answer to that challenge Jehovah said: "Behold, he is in thy hand"; that is, "you are at liberty to make him curse me if you can." Thereafter Satan the Devil afflicted Job with a loathsome disease, from which he suffered so terribly that his own wife said to him: "Hast thou still retain thine integrity? curse God, and die." (Job 2:9) But Job stood firm amidst all this test and maintained his integrity toward God. Then the Devil further afflicted Job by causing certain pro-prietary religionists to turn against him, and through it all Job maintained his integrity, remained firm and true to the Most High.

That which is recorded above during the experiences of Job is an example of those who endure suffering for right, even's sake and who in the face of all manner of persecution and punishment maintain their integrity toward God. Just why God would permit the Devil to proceed with a free hand in opposition to him and to persecute one of those who serve God was not revealed at the time to anyone, not even to the angels. That God had a fix I time in which to make known the reason is certain, however, but exactly on time God will bring the entire his-

to a climax to his own glory. What followed shows that he has permitted the Devil to tempt men for centuries, and particularly through the operation of religion, using it as an instrument to carry out his wicked challenge. The day of reckoning is at hand, when the issue must be settled, and therefore it is God's due time to make known the reason to all those who are diligent to have a proper understanding.

ISRAEL ORGANIZED

The descendants of Jacob, now called Israel, were organized into a nation and put under the leadership of Moses. It was after the Israelites had been miraculously delivered from Egypt, and while they were encamped at the base of Mount Sinai, that God gave to that people his fundamental law and his statutes. Ten is a symbolic number denoting completeness, and what is generally called "the ten commandments" really means all or the complete statement of God's fundamental law to man. His statutes specifically define man's duty to be performed in harmony with the fundamental law. The nation of Israel was in direct contrast to all other nations and peoples because Israel was the people chosen by the Lord God for himself, and by and through which people he would and did make prophetic pictures foreshadowing greater things to come to pass in the future.—1 Corinthians 10:11.

Note here how God gave to that people the fundamental law, which fundamental law ap-

of fathers and murderers of mothers, for man-slayers."—1 Timothy 1:9.

Love, which is the perfect expression of unselfishness, is the complete fulfillment of the law, therefore making the enforcement of law unnecessary. (Romans 13:10) The very essence of the law is written in the heart of every creature that is in full harmony with God and delights to do his will. At the time the Israelites were assembled at Mount Sinai the Devil had almost all of the people on earth in his service, and therefore all were in the way of destruction. The Israelites God would safeguard from that destructive influence. The law which God gave to the Israelites was not for God's benefit, but entirely for the benefit of man. If a man walks with the Devil he is certain to die, but if he maintains his integrity toward God he will live. Therefore God gave his law through Moses to the Israelites and which applies to all who want to do right, and the first in order and first in importance of his commandments or fundamental law is thus, to wit:

"And God spake all these words, saying, I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondmen. Thou shalt have no other gods before me. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children."

'en unto the third and fourth generation of em that hate me; and shewing mercy unto ousands of them that love me, and keep my mmandments.'--Exodus 20:1-6.

The law of God never changes, because God ver changes. (Malachi 3:6) His law points t the way to everlasting life. No creature ll ever be given life everlasting who willfully, it is, intentionally, violates God's law. If man poses another for his god, Jehovah will not nt to that man life. For a man to violate fundamental law of God means that that n puts himself on the side of the Devil, who refore leads him to destruction. For the esit of man, then, God provided in his law t man should have no other god before Him, ause God alone is the source of life.

Within a short time after the giving of the to Israel, and while Moses was in the mount, the Israelites in violation of God's law le a golden calf as an image for worship, and punishment for their sin God caused 3,000 he Israelites to be killed in one day. 'And I plagued the people, because they made the len calf.' (Exodus 32:28-35) The worship- of the Israelites before the golden calf was practice of religion, and they were therefore lling to the influence of the Devil. For God ermit the people, whom he had set aside himself, to indulge in religion, which is of Devil, would, to be sure, mean that he would nit them to align themselves with his enemy Devil. The making of an image of anything even, such as an image of the Lord himself,

and bowing down or worshiping before that image, is a violation of God's fundamental law. To safeguard them from the Devil men are commanded to worship the Lord God and refrain from worshiping before images. The use of any kind of image in connection with worshiping the Lord is a sin, as will be more fully considered hereafter.

God gave his law to the people, therefore, to safeguard them from the influence and power of the Devil, who operates chiefly through religion, and avers to turn all people away from Almighty God. It is written in the Scriptures that Jehovah God gave his word of promise to Abraham that He would raise up a seed and in that seed the opportunity for blessings should come to all the peoples of the earth. Abraham pictured God himself, and his son or natural seed, Isaac, pictured Christ Jesus, the beloved Son of God. God's law looked forward to the coming of that promised seed, Christ Jesus, the Redeemer of mankind, and He gave the law because of sin, to safeguard his chosen people, the Israelites, that they might be in a proper condition to receive his promised seed Jesus when he did come.

The situation was this: Adam had sinned, and by inheritance all mankind came under the effect of that sin and condemnation, and in due time all men must perish by reason thereof unless saved by and through God's provision for them: "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death

passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: therefore, as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life." (Romans 5:12, 18) "For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord."—Romans 6:23.

Jehovah God is the Giver of life, and his provision is to give life through his beloved Son, Christ Jesus. God's gift of life is to those who have and exercise faith in God and in Christ Jesus, the promised Seed, and who therefore faithfully resist the Devil. God had selected the Israelites from amongst all the peoples of earth and would now give them an opportunity to maintain their integrity toward him by showing their faith in him and obedience to his law; and in order to safeguard them he put his law about them as a hedge or fence to keep them from serving the Devil. With the coming of Christ Jesus those who had then maintained their integrity toward God by obeying his law to the best of their ability, and who had and exercised faith in Christ Jesus, would be in line to be saved and receive the gift of life. Therefore it is written that the transgression of God's law is sin. "Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law." (1 John 3:4) It is further written: "It [that is, the law] was added because of transgressions, till the seed [Christ] should come to whom the promise was made; . . . Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster

"BESETTING SIN"

Behold now an army of more than 600,000 men, from twenty years of age upward, besides women and children, marching through the desert on their way to the land of promise, taking with them their food and their animals, a people (and their beasts of burden) which God had separated from other peoples of earth. They were marching in obedience to God's commandment. How many of those men would maintain their integrity toward God and reach the land of promise! What was the great sin that beset them so easily, and that was about them from the very time they began their journey! The answer clearly shown by all their experiences, and by what is recorded in the Scriptures, is this: Religion and formalism, invented by the Devil, and which the people were induced to practice to turn them away from the Almighty God. Religion has ever been the Devil's chief instrument by which he has beguiled the people and blinded them to the truth. Religion was the besetting sin of Israel, which sin has been the besetting sin of those who have professed to follow in the footsteps of Christ Jesus.

Long years after that journey in the wilderness began the apostle Paul, of the Hebrew stock, wrote the epistle to the Hebrews, and therein he lists a number of faithful men from Abel to John the Baptist who had maintained their integrity toward God, and wherein he shows that it was their shunning religion and their unswerving devotion and faithfulness to the commandments of Almighty God that had



and is the Life-giver, and he is therefore a "jealous God", or zealous for righteousness, and will not permit his name or his Word to be sullied by any part of the Devil's operations or schemes, and therefore He will not give life to those who indulge in things invented and used by the Devil to defame Jehovah's name. The law of God which provides that men shall have no other god before Him and shall make no image of anything in heaven or in earth and bow down to it is solely for the purpose of safeguarding man from the Devil's wickedness, "the sin which doth so easily beset" all creatures.

Referring again to the apostle's words, "Let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us," which words are addressed to God's covenant people, it is clearly to be seen that no person can faithfully and truly serve God and permit anything to divide his affections between God and any creature of creation; that he cannot practice religion, and at the same time serve God faithfully; that he must lay aside these weights, and do as the apostle Paul did and said: "This one thing I do" (Philippians 3:13), and that is, to follow in the footsteps of Jesus and obey God's commandments. Religion is clearly in opposition to the commandments of Almighty God.

God's law is plain, and stubbornness on the part of anyone in obeying that law is idolatry. (1 Samuel 15:23) Every religious practice under the sun means that the practitioners are indulging in idolatry. The use of images in worshiping is idolatry, and all idolatry is abominable in the

sight of God. As God permitted Job to be subjected to great trials, so he permitted the Devil to tempt the Israelites, and to tempt his covenant people since, that they might prove their choice between God and the Devil. Knowing that the Israelites would come in contact with those who practiced the Devil religion, God therefore gave them this specific commandment: "Turn ye not unto idols, nor make to yourselves molten gods: I am the Lord your God." (Leviticus 19. 4) "Ye shall make you no idols nor graven image, neither rear you up a standing image, neither shall ye set up any image of stone in your land, to bow down unto it: for I am the Lord your God." "And I will destroy your high places, and cut down your images, and cast your caskets upon the carcasses of your idols, and my soul shall abhor you." (Leviticus 26. 1, 31) All the kinds of the people and idols." (1st Chronicles 16. 24) Religion, therefore, clearly appears to be one of man's great errors, which the chief enemy, the Devil, has vented to lead men into destruction.

What followed after the giving of the law shows the great necessity for that law. The word of the Israelites during their journey isplete with instances of turning to idols of the religion. Coming in contact with the Moabites, they found that people practicing a religion called "Baal worship", and many of the Israelites indulged in that religion in violation of the law and thus exposed themselves to Jesus' wrath and many of them were destroyed. "And [the Moabites] called the people unto the

rifices of their gods: and the people did eat, and bowed down to their gods. And Israel joined himself unto Baal-peor; and the anger of the Lord was kindled against Israel. And the Lord said unto Moses, Take all the heads of the people, and hang them up before the Lord against the sun, that the fierce anger of the Lord may be turned away from Israel. And Moses said unto the judges of Israel, Slay ye every one his men that were joined unto Baal-peor."—Numbers 25: 2-5.

Time and again the Israelites violated God's law by turning to Devil religion, and the result was that only a very few of those who left Egypt lived to see the land of promise. When Moses was delivering to the Israelites his last exhortation, he said to them, as commanded by the Lord God: "(For ye know how we have dwelt in the land of Egypt; and how we came through the nations which ye passed by; and ye have seen their abominations, and their idols, wood and stone, silver and gold, which were among them:) lest there should be among you man, or woman, or family, or tribe, whose heart turneth away this day from the Lord our God, to go and serve the gods of these nations; lest there should be among you a root that beareth gall and wormwood; and it come to pass, when he heareth the words of this curse, that he bless himself in his heart, saying, I shall have peace, though I walk in the imagination of mine heart, to add drunkenness to thirst: the Lord will not spare him, but then the anger of the Lord and his jealousy shall smoke against that man, and all the curses

reign of King Ahab and his wife Jezebel that almost all the people were turned away to Devil religion. God sent his faithful prophet Elijah to deliver his message of warning and to tell Ahab that his practice of religion was causing the Israelites all the trouble that they were experiencing: "And it came to pass, when Ahab saw Elijah, that Ahab said unto him, Art thou he that troubleth Israel? And he answered, I have not troubled Israel; but thou and thy father's house, in that ye have forsaken the commandments of the Lord, and thou hast followed Baalim [the Devil religion]."-1 Kings 18:17, 18.

God raised up Jehu, a faithful servant and who slew Ahab and his household because of the idolatrous practice of religion in which they indulged. "So Jehu slew all that remained of the house of Ahab in Jezreel, and all his great men, and his kinsfolks, and his priests, until he left him none remaining." (2 Kings 10:11) All the practitioners of Baalism, the Devil religion, in Israel were slain by Jehu, and he brought forth the images out of the house of Baal and burned them, and "thus Jehu destroyed Baal [worship] out of Israel". (2 Kings 10:25-29) These instances here are cited as further proof that religion is directly in opposition to God's commandments, is devilish, and is therefore one of man's great enemies, and an abomination.

BACKSLIDERS

Time and again the Israelites acknowledged their wrong and asked for forgiveness, and the Lord forgave them. Straightway they would go

warned the Israelites through his prophets that if they continued their unfaithfulness to him in the practice of Devil religion he would destroy them, and in harmony with his warning he did destroy them because of their unfaithfulness. Exactly at God's fixed time he sent Jesus, his beloved Son, whom he sent to deliver his message of truth. The priests of the Israelites were obligated, by God's commandment, to teach the people concerning his law and the prophecies which referred to the coming of the great Messiah, the promised Seed; therefore they should have known about the coming of Jesus, and the priests in particular should have been ready to receive him.

When Jesus was born, not one of the priests or clergymen or other practitioners of religion was permitted to be witness to the fact, and manifestly that was because they were practicing the Devil religion. God chose as his witnesses to the birth of Jesus the meek herders of sheep. God caused his angels from heaven to announce the birth of Jesus and to speak to the shepherds these words: "And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you: Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multi-

Then Jesus gave to the people a model prayer, which is generally known as "the Lord's prayer". —Matthew 6:9-13.

In the foregoing text it was the priests or clergymen who practiced religion to whom Jesus referred as hypocrites making a great show of their pious faces in the streets that they might be seen of men. Compare the conduct of those Jewish clergymen with the clergymen and religious leaders of this present day. Often you have observed a priest or other clergymen or religious practitioner going about the streets with a prayer book in his hand, pretending to read it, or sitting in the parks doing the same thing. Daily those clergymen walk through the streets wearing peculiar garments that they may attract the attention of men. They stand in the church buildings, as the Jewish clergymen stood in their synagogues, and strike a sanctimonious attitude, and utter senseless speech in a language that few, if any, of those present can understand; and that they do that they may attract attention of men to themselves. Thus Jesus shows that the practitioners of religion among the Jews find their counterpart in the practitioners of religion now on earth in "Christendom".

The man Jesus was the great and true witness of Jehovah God, whom God sent to the earth to tell his message of truth for his name's sake. If the priests and clergymen of that day had been honest and on the side of Almighty God they would have gladly heard the words of Jesus and followed his instructions, but instead they refused to believe him and opposed

him in every possible manner, and this they did because they were the agents of the Devil and therefore the enemies of God. It is written concerning the sincere Jews of the common people, who listened to the preaching of Jesus, that "the common people heard him gladly". (Mark 12:37) Did the clergymen believe the words of Jesus? They did not, but, on the contrary, they did everything they could to induce the people not to believe. When a sincere man reported to those clergymen the wonderful words that Jesus had uttered and things he had done, they replied: "Are ye also deceived? Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him?" (John 7:47,48) Instead of supporting Jesus the clergy of his time used every possible means in opposition to him to prevent the people from hearing his words of wisdom and life. Exactly the same condition exists today with the religious leaders of "Christendom".

OPPOSERS OF TRUTH

What advantage is there in now considering the clergy who were on the earth when Jesus was here, and why should this be done at all? The purpose is to show that those men were practitioners of religion, claiming to represent God, but in fact were on the side of the Devil and were the enemies of God; and that in the present time those who oppose Christ Jesus and his kingdom are the enemies of God and of man; that religionists are always opponents of the truth; which shows that religion proceeds from the Devil and is employed to deceive the

people; and what was true when Jesus was on earth is still true, to wit, that religion is against God and his kingdom. By his prophets of old God had foretold that the religious leaders of Israel would turn the people away from God, and now Jesus, the greatest of all prophets, told those religious teachers to their face that they were hypocrites and the Devil's representatives. What Jesus said to those men applies with even stronger force to those of the present time who practice religion for gain and who oppose those who proclaim God's Word of truth concerning Christ and his kingdom.

The religious leaders among the Jews claimed to be the seed of Abraham according to the promise and that they were the sons of God. Jesus had told them that God had sent him to the earth to bear witness to the truth, and that the message he was delivering was not his own, but that he was speaking the words which God had commanded him to speak; and in the face of these statements the clergy or religionists tried to kill Jesus, and Jesus reminded them of this fact.

Mark here the words of Jesus, addressed to those opposing religionists: "I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you. I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father. They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath

told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me; for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me? He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God."—John 8: 37-47.

And did they show themselves to be sons of the Devil, as Jesus had told them? The facts conclusively show that they did. They practiced religion, based upon the traditions of men, ignored the commandments of God, and thus made the Word of God of none effect, and therefore they were the enemies of God and enemies of the people. Mark here the words of Jesus, which conclusively show the difference between religion and obeying the commandments of God: "Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, . . . saying, Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? . . . But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also

transgress the commandment of God by your tradition! . . . Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Ye hypocrites! well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men."—Matthew 15:1-9.

Those clergymen and preachers were practitioners of "the Jews' religion" and were the instruments of the Devil. Saul afterwards testified to the same effect, as will appear at Galatians 1:13, 14. The Devil got those Jewish clergymen on his side because they were proud and sought the favor of men and taught the doctrines which men had invented and taught and they ignored and disregarded the commandment of God. From the day of Nimrod onward the Devil has employed religion to turn men away from God in furtherance of the Devil's wicked challenge to Jehovah. The Devil works upon the vanity of men and induces them to adopt and practice formalism by which it is claimed that they worship God, but which in truth and in fact is an abomination in the sight of God.

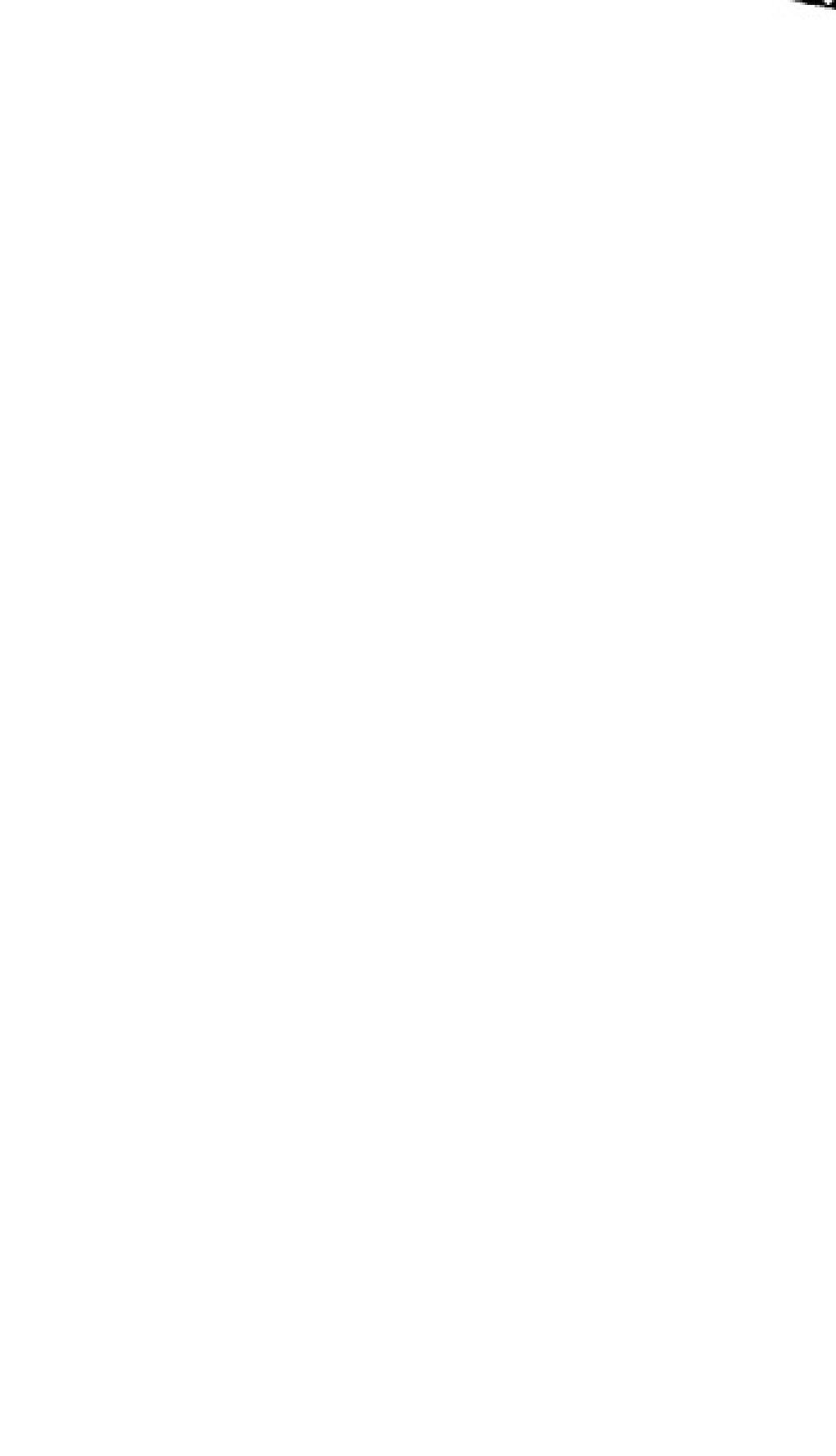
God, through his holy prophets, had announced his purpose to set up a kingdom which should rule the world in righteousness to the honor of God's name and for the good of all righteous creatures. He foretold that he would send his beloved Son, the Messiah, to rule and bless the people. Then came Jesus in due time, declaring to the people that he had come as the

representative of Jehovah God and for the gathering of men unto himself who would faithfully serve Jehovah God and be witnesses to His name. Were there any religionists amongst those Jews who joined with Jesus in proclaiming the kingdom and inviting the people to put themselves under Jehovah's King! Not one; but, on the contrary, they tried to keep the people out of the kingdom; concerning which Jesus said: "But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in." (Matthew 23: 13) At this present time who among the religious leaders are telling the people of God's kingdom under Christ as the only hope for the world! Not a single one. On the contrary, they tell the people to give no heed to those persons who come to them preaching the message of God's kingdom. They cite human inventions and human agencies as the means of relief and salvation for the people.

The religious Pharisees, who opposed Jesus, were great sticklers for formalism, that they might appear in the eyes of men as being very clean and righteous and wonderful men. They were following the traditions of their fathers who had murdered the faithful prophets of God, and so now they would seek to kill Jesus, the greatest of all prophets. Therefore Jesus said to them: "Woe unto you, rabbis and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whitened sepulchers, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of

all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers! how can ye escape the damnation of hell!" (Matthew 23: 27-33) Here is the clear declaration of Jesus that religionists are the agents of the Devil, whether they are aware of that fact or not.





gionists who falsely accused him. It was the religionists who entered into a conspiracy to have Jesus put to death, because they feared that the people who followed him would all abandon the clergymen and those religionists would be left without any means of support; and in proof of this it is written: "The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing! behold, the world is gone after him." (John 12:19) "Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place [our jobs] and nation."

—John 11:47, 48.

The high priest then expressed himself in these words: "Ye know nothing at all, . . . it is expedient for us, that one man should die . . . he prophesied that Jesus should die . . . Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death." (John 11:49-53) This was a conspiracy to commit deliberate murder, and that conspiracy was carried into effect by the commission of the overt act.

The clergymen caused Jesus to be wrongfully charged with the high crime of treason. It was not the common people or the political element that demanded his death, but it was the religionists, who cried out: "Crucify him," and, "His blood be on us." (Matthew 27:12-26) When Christ Jesus was nailed to the tree and was pouring out his lifeblood, the clergy mocked him: "Likewise also the chief priests mocking

him, with the scribes and elders, said, . . . He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him; for he said, I am the Son of God." (Matthew 27: 41-43) The same spirit moves modern-day clergymen to speak against those who proclaim the message of God's kingdom.

The clergymen or religionists did not see that the body of Jesus had a decent burial, but it was a rich lawyer of honorable estate who had not consented to the action of the priests that begged for the body of Jesus that he might give it a decent burial. (Matthew 27: 57) It was the chief priests and Pharisees, the religious leaders, that tried to prevent the resurrection of Jesus, and that bribed soldiers with large sums of money to say falsely that his disciples had stolen the body while they slept. (Matthew 28: 11-13) Can any honest person for one moment doubt the guilt of those religionists and that they, the leaders of religion, scribes and Pharisees, clergymen, acted as the agents and representatives of the Devil? As progress is made in this study keep in mind that it was the religionists that murdered Jesus, and then compare therewith the facts which show that the murderers in modern times are leaders in religious practice.

PURPOSE OF HIS COMING

The man Jesus was the Son of God. Before he became a man he was known as the Logos, the active agent of Jehovah God in the creation of all things. (Colossians 1: 16) By the supreme

power of Jehovah God, Jesus, the Logos, "was made flesh [a human creature] and dwelt among men." (John 1:14) Jehovah God sent him to earth as his special representative, and the message which he delivered was the message from the Almighty God. (John 7:16) The Devil, the inventor of lies, the deceiver and murderer, for centuries had slandered the name of Jehovah God, mocked him and defied him and challenged him to put on earth any man who would remain true to God when the Devil put him to the test. After giving the Devil four thousand years to carry on unhindered his wicked work Jehovah God sent his beloved Son Jesus to earth to prove the Devil a liar and to be the vindicator of Jehovah's name. In carrying out the will of God it was of first importance that Jesus proclaim the truth; therefore when asked concerning his mission on earth, he replied: "I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice." (John 18:37) It follows, therefore, that every person who refuses to hear the message of Jesus is not of the truth, but that he is under the control of the arch liar and enemy, the Devil.

REDEMPTION

The primary reason and purpose of Jesus' coming to earth was to bear witness to the truth of and concerning Jehovah God and his kingdom and to vindicate Jehovah's holy name. Incidental thereto, and as a secondary reason, he

The other who could influence public opinion
and the self-sacrifice of the people, and to
break the will of God, who desired that "the
greatest good should be given them." The
Jesuits by their secret labours, &c., helped to
lead the people of the nation from
ignorance and superstition to the knowledge of
the true principles of religion. The Jesuits
in Holland have earned \$11,161,222.00 at the
time of their expulsion from Holland.

3.

(θ)

4.

(θ)

(θ)

(θ)

(θ)



of your understanding being enlightened [that they might receive the spirit of wisdom]; that ye may know . . . what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come; and hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all."—Ephesians 1: 17-23.

It is therefore made certain that "the church", which is the only true church, is that body of creatures selected by Jehovah and brought into Christ Jesus, and who give honor and glory to Jehovah God, and who serve him to the exclusion of everything; that these members are not confined to some earthly organization, but that God selects them and assigns them to a place in his organization as it pleases him. (1 Corinthians 12: 18) "Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body," and "the church is subject unto Christ, . . . that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish." (Ephesians 5: 23, 24, 26, 27) No man or company of men has any right or authority to set up an organization and

(1 Corinthians 3:16, 17) As progress is made in the examination of what follows, it will be seen that the enemy has seized upon the name "the church" and used the same to perpetuate the great fraud upon man and to further defame the name of Almighty God.

PURPOSE

What is God's purpose in having a church? The answer from the Scriptures is, that he might use it to testify to his name and to carry out his commandments in vindication of his name. Here again it is needful to emphasize the challenge that the Devil flung in the face of Jehovah God, and God's reply thereto. The Devil declared that he could cause all men to "curse God to his face" if he (the Devil) were permitted to put man to the test, and God permitted the Devil to try that very thing. God replied: 'For this cause have I permitted thee to remain, for to show thee my power; and that my name may be declared throughout all the earth.'—Exodus 9:16, *Leeser*.

God's judgment against the Devil was that he should be destroyed; but before the execution of that judgment He would have his own great name declared throughout the earth, and then he would exercise his unlimited power against the enemy. God then proceeds in his own due time and good way to take out from the world faithful men and women who prove their integrity toward him, and he makes them members of his church under Christ Jesus and uses such to proclaim his name throughout the earth be-

ones, in order to have God's approval, must follow in the footsteps of Jesus and prove faithful unto death. (1 Peter 2: 21; Revelation 2: 10) It is certain, therefore, that all the true followers of Christ Jesus, who constitute his church, must suffer more or less at the hands of the Devil, and which suffering and punishment is inflicted upon them by the religious agents of the Devil on earth, just as they afflicted the Lord Jesus Christ. For this reason some of the sufferings of Christ was left over for the body's sake, as it is written: "Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church."—Colossians 1: 24.

It was the religionists who persecuted Jesus, and he declared that that same class of religionists would persecute all who would be his true followers. "If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me."—John 15: 19-21.

The fact that Christ Jesus, the Head of the church, is the Faithful and True Witness of Jehovah (Revelation 3: 14), and also the further fact that he stated, "Every one that is

mouth of Jehovah shall name." (Isaiah 62:2, *A.R.V.*) Consider these indisputable truths set forth in the Word of God, and then ask yourself and answer this question: Is there an organization on earth today that is preaching to the people that Jehovah is the only true God, that Christ Jesus is the King and rightful Ruler of the world, and that his kingdom is at hand and is the only hope of the world?

The church being God's organization, taken out of the world for His name's sake, it follows that the members thereof are those who worship the Almighty God in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23) They honor God, and not man and man-made organizations. Such true worshipers cannot be faithful to God and at the same time participate in the political affairs of this wicked world. Those who worship God in spirit and in truth are wholly devoted to him in obeying his commandments. "For the worship [mistranslated *religion* in the *Authorized Version*] that is pure and holy before God the Father, is this: to visit the fatherless and the widows in their affliction, and that one keep himself unspotted from the world."—James 1:27, *Syriac Version*.

The great adversary of God and enemy of the church and of all its members is that old Serpent, Satan the Devil. It is certain, therefore, that that old deceiver would inaugurate many and all kinds of seductive schemes concerning the church in order to deceive the people. This he has done, and at the same time the Devil puts forth his great effort to devour those who constitute the true church. To those who

part of God's church, taken out from the world as witnesses to his name, Jehovah has committed the "testimony of Jesus Christ", and those who obey the commandments of the Almighty God. Against these faithful ones the Devil, that old Dragon, makes his assault and tries to destroy them, as it is written: "And the dragon was wrath with the woman God's woman, symbolic of his regeneration, that Zion, the church (Heath 11:15), and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ." Revelation 12:17.

It is also written that the church must fight the enemy Satan and his agents by proclaiming the truth; that they shall not use carnal weapons, such as guns and cannon and swords made of steel, and other instruments that destroy (2 Corinthians 10:4); that the weapons of their warfare are "the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God". (Ephesians 6:17) That is the reason that Jehovah's witnesses must tell the truth and do so amidst great opposition and persecution carried on by Satan and his religious representatives.

Do you know of any religious organization that engages in a war upon others and that calls itself at the same time "The church of God", and which organization uses deadly weapons with which to destroy those who oppose them? Do you know of any organization claiming that it is the church of God, which engages in the politics of the world, and which organization attempts to rule the world? Do you know

of any religious organization claiming to be the church of God but which makes treaties or concordats with beastly political and commercial powers and works with them in carrying out worldly schemes! If so, it is certain that such "religious organization" is not the representative of God and Christ, but that it is the representative of the enemy Satan, who is the enemy of every man that desires to see righteousness prevail.

The life of every human creature on earth today is in the balance, and that includes you. The truth is of greatest importance to you, because you must know and follow the truth in order to live. If it is your honest and sincere desire to know what is the truth, then put aside any and all preconceived opinions or prejudices and then honestly and sincerely consider the indisputable facts that follow herein, together with the infallible Word of the Almighty God; and if you do so, your understanding will be enlightened as never before. Are you prepared now to rely upon God's Word, which is the truth, even though it makes it clear that many men and organizations that appear to be good are devilish in the extreme! Do you want to live, and therefore do you want to know the truth? What follows will shock many persons, and make them angry, but such persons are prejudiced and foolish, to say the least. Those who are really honest and sincere and desire to serve God and live will be delighted to learn the truth as set forth in what follows herein.

CHAPTER V

RACKETEERS

"The wicked worketh a deceitful work."

—Proverbs 11:18.

A RACKET is a scheme, plan, dodge or trick used for selfish gain and which deceives and works injury to others. A perversion of the truth for the purpose of inducing another in reliance upon it to part with something valuable is a racket. A false scheme or misrepresentation or suppression of the truth, which results in injury to others, and for pecuniary gain to the schemer, is a racket. A deception intentionally practiced, with a view to gain, is a racket.

A racketeer is a schemer who is artful, wily and cunning and who uses his plan or scheme to gain an unfair advantage over others. The racketeer gains an undue advantage over others, and then uses his scheme or plan to rob or pillage others, and this he does for real or supposed gain to himself. All racketeers are public enemies and enemies of honest persons, and are the enemies of God. Rackets, practiced by racketeers, work injury to those upon whom the trick is practiced.

Men who are engaged in traffic that is unlawful and that works injury to the people are racketeers and public enemies. The stealing of

children or persons and holding them for ransom is a racket, and the stealer or kidnapers are public enemies. Men who engage in the white-slave trade are racketeers and public enemies. Real estate promoters who operate schemes to defraud others are racketeers and public enemies. Those who operate a scheme by offering prizes to induce persons to buy or sell worthless goods, wares and merchandise are racketeers. Men who engage in robbery, stealing and murder for personal gain are racketeers and public enemies. The man who engages in the scheme of blackmail and thereby obtains money is a racketeer and a public enemy. All such public enemies either put the people in fear or fraudulently overreach them. Men who engage in political schemes misrepresenting the facts in order to induce the people to support them that they may thereby reap a personal or pecuniary gain are racketeers and public enemies. Commercial men or corporations operating a scheme or schemes that result in injury to the people are racketeers and public enemies. Those who engage in any kind of fraudulent scheme that results in loss or injury to others are racketeers and public enemies. Men who use motion pictures to mislead the people, and thereby gain any kind of profit in name, money or influence, are racketeers. All racketeers are agents of the Devil, whether they realize that fact or not. All wrongful schemes originate with the Devil, and that great enemy induces and influences men to use such rackets to do injury to others and to bring reproach upon the name of the

thereby easily misleads many honest and sincere persons. Strange as it may seem, the two words "Christian" and "religion" are diametrically opposed one to the other. Most persons in the land called "Christendom" have been led to believe that the two words mean one and the same thing, and through lack of knowledge of the truth great injury is done to the people. The greatest public enemy is that which operates with a righteous appearance but which is fraudulent, brings reproach upon God's name, misrepresents his purpose, and thereby robs the people of their money, their peace of mind, their liberty of speech and thought, and the opportunity of life everlasting.

Under the practice of the so-called "Christian religion" the world at the present time has reached that period described in the Bible in these words: "This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, treecbreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith. But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all men, as theirs also was."—2 Timothy 3:1-5, 8, 9.

lowing indisputable historical facts should be read with real interest, since they disclose that Rome completely fell under the Devil religion.

The quotations following are from *The Encyclopedia Americana*:

ROMAN RELIGION. From the time that the Roman religion appears within the pale of traditional and recorded history it seems to have been constantly and progressively subjected to varying influences, both internal and external, and to have passed through many changes. . . . Fundamentally the primitive religious ideas of all the Indo-European peoples were quite similar. Even the Roman religion, in the days when Rome was governed by kings and had already begun to evolve complicated rituals and complex myths, still retained a suggestive similarity to that of India. . . . The early Roman gods were the personification of the elements of nature. The old Roman deities and supernatural beings of their heroic life, the patrons of the chase and the guardian spirits of the mountains, the rivers, the earth, the sky and the upper heavens gradually assumed more definite attributes. . . . The deities and religious customs and practices of all the tribes of Italy of Indo-European origin, which were quite similar, gradually became domesticated in Rome. Naturally as the Roman Empire broadened and became more cosmopolitan, its religious system also became broader and more all-embracing. Having absorbed the deities of the Italic Peninsula, the act of absorption became, with Rome, all-impressing, and the pantheon of the Imperial City, pushing out its types seems in every direction throughout the already wide surfaces of the rapidly extending Roman domain, even beyond it, brought new creeds, new deities and new philosophies into Rome. Under such con-

the world . . . for the development of the spiritual forces.

The Devil and his Temples Vol 22, pages 611-615.

The "youth" mentioned in the preceding are God; and the wicked devonit, which inhabit what is known in the scripture as "the land of Magog". The faithful apostle of Jesus Christ saw the anti-christ religion attracting in their day and forever went the people against it. Soon after they passed from the earth the Devil saw to it that what began as the Christian organization was corrupted and turned into what has since been called the "Christian religion", and which has since operated in the earth under the name of the "Human Catholic religious system". The following historical facts, taken from Lord's Old Roman World, are here appropriate:

"In the first century not many wise or noble were called. In the second century . . . It was a disgrace to be a Christian in the eye of fashion or power . . . the church . . . was a small body of pure and blameless men, who did not aspire to control society. But they had attracted the notice of the government and were of sufficient consequence to be persecuted." During the second century "Bishops had become influential, not in society, but among the Christians". Then "ecclesiastical centralization commenced; . . . The Church was thus laying the foundation of its future polity and power".

It is certain that the Lord God had not marked out such a policy. It is equally certain that it was the Devil who was planting and cultivating

TITLE PAGE

The Lord God gives warning to man in these words: "The fear of man bringeth a curse; but whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe." (Proverbs 29:23.) The man who fears that he may lose some honor or other thing that he considers as valuable unless he pursues a course which seems to him certain to fall into Satan's trap. Ambitious men are easily led into Satan's trap. No doubt the early leaders in what is known as the Catholic Church organization were sincere, but some of them, particularly being ambitious for honor among men, and fearing they might lose what they had, quickly fell to the lottery of the Devil, who saw to it that they had plenty of it. About 104 years after the death of the apostle Peter the Roman Catholic "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction" was organized. After still farther creatures had passed, and the people had been kept in ignorance of the truth, it was then an easy matter to induce the living ones to believe that a man whom they had been taught to honor as pope and the head of the Hierarchy is the successor of the apostle Peter. The people were thus induced to believe a great and injurious falsehood.

There is no reason to say anything about the man who fills the office of pope, and therefore nothing is here intended to apply to an individual, but what is said is against the office. That office of pope had no existence in the days of the apostles. It was created by men at the instance of Satan, and the first man elected to that office was elected in the year 440 (A.D.).

turn for gain, and is therefore the enemy of God and the enemy of all men.

In the scriptures a "tree" is used as a symbol of a creature or of an organization or group of creatures, and the "fruits" borne by the tree are morally sound for what creates a certain condition, and hence the people are spiritual fruit for their existence and growth. Jesus speaks of the same, says: "A good tree can not bring forth bad fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit." Wherefore by these fruits ye shall know them. Not every one that cometh unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven."—Matthew 7:17-23

Jehovah God has covenanted to give to Christ Jesus and his true followers who follow him, and who are made members of his church, his kingdom, which kingdom at all times rule in righteousness and administer blessings to the people. (Luke 22:28-30) The kingdom of God has nothing that is carnal, and has nothing in common with the harsh, cruel and wicked system that rules the world now, and which present rule is under the Devil and his representatives. Concerning this world Jesus said: "My kingdom is not of this world." (John 18:36) "The prince of this world (Satan) . . . hath nothing in me." (John 14:30) The Scriptures then show that Christ Jesus takes his kingdom and rules at the time of his second coming, at which time he gathers unto himself his church.—2 Timothy 4:1; 2 Thessalonians 2:1.

voice." (John 18:37) All such must obey his commandments or else suffer destruction. (John 14:15; Acts 3:23) To lay claim to the high office of the representative on earth of Jesus Christ, and then to take the course exactly opposite to what Jesus took, is wholly inconsistent and shows that the claims or pretenses of the Catholic organization are false. Consider now the well-known facts in the light of the above and supporting scriptures, and by such scriptures determine the truth or falsity of the claims of the Catholic organization.

Neither Jesus nor his apostles owned any real estate, houses or other property. Of Jesus it is written: "[He] hath not where to lay his head." (Luke 9:58) Jesus and his apostles did not build cathedrals and draw the people into them to serve them, but the Lord and his apostles went about "from house to house" preaching the truth to the people and instructing them in the way of God. (Matthew 10:5-15) All true followers of Christ Jesus have ever pursued the same course. Constantine, the politician and emperor of Rome, who was a pagan or heathen, claimed to adopt "Christianity". He became a "Catholic". Constantine was rich and doubtless had been induced to believe that he could buy his salvation.

The following is quoted from Cardinal Gibbons' *The Faith of Our Fathers*, page 134: "Constantine gave to the Roman Church munificent donations of money and real estate, which were augmented by additional grants contributed by subsequent emperors. Hence the patrimony of

the Roman Pontiffs soon became very considerable." From that time onward the Roman Catholic Church organization became very rich in material things. Thus it is seen that it pursued a course wholly inconsistent with that pursued by Christ Jesus. The religious organization, in the Fourth Century, had bishops and rulers, many of them, and then the bishop of Rome was elected to the office of pope. That was the real beginning of popedom, and was more than 300 years after the days of the apostles.—See *The Encyclopædia Britannica*, Volume 2, page 81.

Soon thereafter the pope, as the head of the Roman Church organization, began to exercise political or temporal power. Pepin, king of France, after defeating the Lombards in the war, placed the pope as temporal ruler of the conquered provinces. Thus the pope came into existence as a temporal power by means of a war of conquest; which is contrary to the Word of God. Says Cardinal Gibbons: "Charlemagne, the successor of Pepin, not only confirms the grant of his father, but increases the temporal domain of the Pope by donating him some additional provinces. This small piece of territory the Roman Pontiffs continued to govern from that time till 1870, with the exception of brief intervals of foreign usurpation."—*The Faith of Our Fathers*, page 137.

In the exercise of his political power the pope has maintained his ambassadors at the courts of almost all the nations of "Christendom". Such a course is entirely inconsistent with and at

The ambition of Mussolini is to become a great war lord and to rule the whole world by force. The Roman Catholic organization, working with him, fully supports his ambition. When Mussolini began and carried on his bloody conquest against the poor blacks of Abyssinia, and in which war many lives were destroyed, the pope and the Catholic organization backed up Mussolini and "blessed" his murderous assaults. Now the dictator of Italy attempts to compel men and women to breed like dumb beasts for the purpose of producing men to be later sacrificed in war, and in this the pope backs up Mussolini. A press dispatch from Rome, published by the United Press and broadcast over many radio stations, under date of March 4, 1937, says: "Italy's Fascist leaders agreed today on a vigorous effort to increase the birth rate and provide more soldiers for the army of the future. A seven-point program was adopted for immediate application by the Fascist grand council, supreme advisory body, in another of its closely guarded night sessions under Premier Benito Mussolini. . . . It was reported that Pope Pius would instruct Roman Catholic clergymen to give full support."

Such a course is clearly in violation of God's everlasting covenant concerning human life, and the so-called Roman Catholic "Church" is guilty under God's law. (Genesis 9:8-13) Does it appear that such an organization represents God and Christ, or that such organization fraudulently uses the name of God and Christ as a

At one time the Roman Catholic Hierarchy controlled Spain, during which time she prosecuted the wicked Inquisition, compelling people to become Catholics or suffer cruel torture. The people rebelled against the highhanded racketeers of Catholicism and organized a republic. Then the Roman Catholic militarists began prosecuting a rebellion against the republic of Spain, carrying on a cruel and vicious war for the purpose of again placing the Roman Catholic Hierarchy in control of that country. The Hierarchy wrongfully obtained possession of millions of money obligations of the Spanish government, concealed the same in their cathedrals, and used it to prosecute a rebellious war, in which hundreds of thousands of persons have been cruelly murdered, many of them killed by Catholic priests. Mussolini and Hitler have supported the Roman Catholic Hierarchy in the prosecution of that rebellious war. Surely no representative of God and Christ on earth could engage in such a warfare, which is in open violation of God's everlasting covenant concerning the sanctity of human life.

Since the World War, and since the Roman Catholic organization has regained temporal power, she has become bold and aggressive as never before. A person would have to be mentally blind who does not now see that the purpose of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is to gain control of the political affairs of the world and rule the people with dictators. The papacy has made an alliance with the political rulers of Japan, who make no pretense of being Chris-

tians, and she there prosecutes a campaign to silence everybody that speaks the truth against Catholicism. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy is vigorously pushing its campaign to gain control of the offices and political affairs of the British Commonwealth of Nations, but her greatest effort is now put forth to gain control of the United States of America. A book published in 1935 by a former Roman Catholic Jesuit, who manifestly was sick of the duplicity practiced by the rulers in that wicked religious organization, amongst other things says:

In theory, Catholic Action is the work and service of lay Catholics in the cause of religion, under the guidance of the bishops. In practice it is the Catholic group fighting their way to control America . . .

There was a time—it is now past—when only pious Catholics took part in the work of the Church. But today many Catholics who cannot qualify as pious are busy about Catholic Action. Catholicism, in America at least, has ceased to be a matter of religious observance. Catholicism now is something that partakes of clannishness, and that is constituted in large part by social and political and "club" affiliations. Among the hundreds of Catholic leaders who are outstanding for their loyalty to the cause are to be found quite a few who have little if any regard for Catholic doctrines or observances. Catholic Action would be a far less serious factor in this country were its only agents pious and devout Catholics. The starting point of the wave of Catholic Action in this country may be traced back to the inauguration of the National Catholic Welfare Conference in 1921. On that occasion Archbishop Hanna declared: "We have co-ordinated and united the Catholic power of this country.

It now knows where and when to act and is encouraged by the consciousness of its unity. We feel ourselves powerful because our reunion has become visible." From that day Catholic strength has grown apace, and Catholic organizations have multiplied. . . .

New organizations spring into existence every month. Only last May (1935) a "Catholic War Veterans Association" was established under the patronage of Bishop Molloy of Brooklyn. Already it has several "posts" and it aims at becoming not only a nation-wide but an international organization. Women auxiliaries are attached to the "posts" under the snappy name of "Yeomanettes". "I am sure," announced the chaplain, Father Higgins, "that we will have the holy backing of Cardinal Hayes and that the entire hierarchy will likewise approve." Contemporaneously with the Catholic War Veterans, the Catholic College Graduates felt inspired to do more than they were doing for Catholic Action and to set up a new organization, so that their leadership in Catholic life might become more effective. Father Parsons S.J., explaining the new move, writes: ". . . Organize! Pool the intellects and the wills of as many of the graduates as can be got together. Give them a common objective. Fire their imaginations with the vision of a great movement which takes its roots from deep within the traditions that formed our Western civilization. Let them be daring. Let them be even revolutionary if the need be for that."

. . . "Catholic men," he said, "should unite in order to be able to tell legislatures that they must not introduce bills which are inimical to the ideals of the family or the ideals of the Catholic Church. They should organize so as to be strong enough to insist that school

the hand of a French general and destroyed the government?" — *French Church* 2d. Ed. page 511.

It would not profit to call attention here to the device the anti employed politically and otherwise to push forward "Catholic Action", and thereby gain control of America and other nations. The purpose here is to call attention to the fact that a religious organization that indulges in such political, commercial, military and other wicked methods as those employed by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy could not possibly be the representative of Christ on earth, and that therefore the claims or pretenses of the Roman Catholic organization concerning its being the church of God are wholly fraudulent and false. Such alone should be sufficient to prove to every honest and sincere person that the Roman Catholic organization is the instrument of the Devil and therefore inimical to the welfare of humankind. If a person desires to jeopardize his eternal welfare by holding on to and supporting that wicked organization, which is the enemy of God and man, such is his privilege; but this is a warning, that he may have no excuse for later saying that he did not know the organization represented the Devil. The purpose of this publication is to aid honest and sincere persons, whether Catholic or otherwise, to see the truth, that they may seek and find the only place of security.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy church organization is the most perfectly organized political body on earth and is the most powerful one of all organizations. The British Commonwealth of

Nations holds the distinction of being the greatest world power that ever existed. Its claim is that its possessions are so far flung that the sun shines on some part thereof at all times. Made up of many peoples, kindreds and tongues, the British Commonwealth of Nations is truly cosmopolitan. Many good people of England are beginning to see the great danger that now threatens the Commonwealth and that such danger is the Roman Catholic Hierarchy.

In practically all of the colonies or subordinate portions of the Commonwealth, Roman Catholic officials are in control, and those officials utterly disregard the rights of any non-Catholics. In both Northern and Southern Rhodesia, in West Africa, in the Fiji Islands, in Quebec and many other parts of the Commonwealth, political, religious Roman Catholics under the domination of the Vatican control the public offices. They manifest an outward allegiance to the British Commonwealth, but at heart those Catholic officials are loyal only to the Vatican. They suppress the truth and forbid the importation of publications that would enlighten the people in these colonies, particularly the natives, and thus keep them in ignorance. If the people perchance get into possession of literature that enlightens them concerning God's Word and his kingdom, Roman Catholic officials take immediate steps to prevent the further publication of such literature and the promulgation of the truth. Those Catholic officials do not hesitate to promulgate lies, charging true Christians with crimes, which per-

and acts in an evil guilty. Such lies are told to furnish an excuse to prohibit the people from possessing anything that explains to them the Works of the Devil, which Works of Sin expose the duplicity and wickedness of the Roman Catholic organization.

From the subordinate parts of the Commonwealth persecutions are being brought to bear, on England in particular, and it is only a question of time, and that a short time, until the British Commonwealth of Nations will be dominated and controlled by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. Such a course of action is wholly inconsistent with that of true followers of Christ, and these facts are cited here to prove that the Roman Catholic organization does not represent God and Christ but represents the Devil.

HONOR AND WEALTH

In the United States alone, it is claimed, there are twenty million of the Catholic laity, that is, "children of the church" or "Catholic population", which population is dominated by thirty thousand clergymen. The Catholic Church organization in America holds title to property valued at more than two billion dollars. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, in an article published in 1927, shows that at that time the Catholic church had within its organization throughout the earth 294,583,000 persons. The material wealth of the Catholic organization is to be found in great sums on every continent and country of the earth, aggregating many billions. Whence does its tremendous wealth come? What

representations and claims have been made by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to induce the people to put themselves under the dominating control of that organization and to so greatly enrich that religious, political organization!

P U R G A T O R Y

Without a doubt the source of revenue of the Roman Catholic church organization, that which has brought the greatest amount of money into the coffers of the Vatican, is the doctrine of "purgatory". Millions of persons have put their trust in the clergymen and by the clergymen have been induced to believe that when a man dies it is only the body that dies, but that the soul of that man continues to live and that every soul goes immediately to one of three places, that is, the righteous to heaven, the willfully wicked to eternal torment or hell, and those who have died in venial sin and who have not been cleaned up go to "purgatory", there to remain for an indefinite period of time, the duration of which may be shortened by money contributed by living friends and paid into the hands of priests of the Catholic Church to say prayers on behalf of the dead. Also it is represented the money thus contributed results beneficially to those who are living and that after death their time in "purgatory" might be shortened.

Sincere people, believing such representations to be true, have rushed into the Catholic organization and have freely given up their money, hoping thereby to gain for themselves and their

She also teaches us that, although the souls consigned to this intermediate state, commonly called purgatory, cannot help themselves, they may be aided by the [prayers] of the faithful on earth. The existence of purgatory naturally implies the correlative dogma—the utility of praying for the dead—for the souls consigned to this middle state have not reached the term of their journey. They are still exiles from heaven and fit subjects for Divine clemency.

" . . . His soul will be ultimately saved, but he shall suffer, for a temporary duration, in the purifying flames of Purgatory. This interpretation is not mine. It is the unanimous voice of the Fathers of Christendom."—*The Faith of Our Fathers*, pages 205-208.

This is a plain statement that the doctrine of "purgatory" is based upon tradition and not upon the Word of God, and according to the rule laid down by Jesus this doctrine makes void the Word of God, because it is false. (Matthew 15:3, 6) For the purpose of laying the foundation for the doctrine of "purgatory" the same authority, on page 217, says this: "For what is death? A mere separation of body and soul. The body, indeed, dies, but the soul lives [on] . . . It continues after death, as before, to think, to remember, to live."

Such is the teaching of men in the Catholic Church organization, handed down for generations by tradition. You may choose to believe tradition or the Bible. Which are you willing to believe? The Bible proof is now here submitted, showing that the "purgatory" doctrine

it shall be given and therefore of the Devil. The Devil is the author of all the Vices of the flesh, and has the full enforcement of the hierarchy. That is more than concerning the soul. "The soul that sinneth, the same shall die" (Ezechiel 18:4, Deuteronomy 24:16) The word creation of the flesh in the Catholic definition of "perdition" is proved false. What is the soul? It is a spirit, the thing created. Every man is a soul, but no man possesses a soul by himself. 3:17 it is written "But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, that shalt not eat of it, for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die." By what authority is the claim made that death is merely the separation of the body and soul and that the soul lives on? That claim is based wholly on the Devil's lie. God declared that man should die if he sinned. The Devil says there is no death, and Jesus says the Devil is a liar. (Genesis 3:4; John 8:44) "All they that be fat upon earth shall eat and worship, all they that go down to the dust shall bow before him: and none can keep alive his own soul." -Psalm 22:29.

Catholic tradition says: "The dead continue to remember, to think and to love." The Catholic Bible says, "For there is no one in death, that is mindful of thee: and who shall confess to thee in hell (the grave (Iust. Ver.))?" (Psalm 6:6, Douay) This same scripture in the *authorized Version* says: "For in death there is no remembrance of thee: in the grave who shall give thee thanks?" (Psalm 6:5) "The dead praise not the Lord, neither any that go down into silence." (Psalm 115:17) "For the living

know that they shall die, but the dead know nothing more, neither have they a reward any more: for the memory of them is forgotten. . . . Whatsoever thy hand is able to do, do it earnestly: for neither work, nor reason, nor wisdom, nor knowledge shall be in hell [the grave], whither thou art hastening." — Ecclesiastes 9:5, 10, Catholic *Douay Version*.

Seeing that the Scriptures conclusively prove that the dead are not conscious anywhere and not undergoing punishment or suffering in "purgatory", it is clear that the "purgatory" doctrine is another of the Devil's lies employed by men to deceive and to rob the people, and to turn them away from God, and to carry on the most subtle, devilish racket on earth. Note now, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has always invoked the rule that the common people must not study the Bible by themselves but must receive only whatsoever the Catholic Church teaches. See *The Faith of Our Fathers*, page 74, where it is said that "God never intended the Bible to be the Christian's rule of faith, independently of the . . . authority of the [Catholic] Church". On the contrary, the Scriptures, written in the Bible at the command of Almighty God, were written to be man's true and unsailing guide that the man of God might be fully equipped (2 Timothy 3:16, 17). There is no text in the Bible that supports the theory of "purgatory"; and, knowing this to be true, the clergy of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy tell the people that they must not attempt to study the Bible independently, but must take the interpretation of

the priests. "Purgatory" is a religious doctrine, invented by the enemy of God and man for the purpose of turning men away from God.

Any kind of scheme or trick that is operated to cause others to unwittingly part with their money is a racket. Three-card monte, the shell game, the lightning-rod scheme, the real estate schemes, or the prize-contest scheme, or any other scheme that is used to improperly take away from the people their money, is a racket. Inducing people to invest their money in lottery schemes or suchlike is a racket; all of which are bad and are strictly avoided by honest and careful persons. When a man or organization gains the confidence of others and then takes advantage of such others and thereby wrongfully causes them to give up their money, that is a vicious racket, because the one robbed has no way of protecting himself. When a man or organization induces the people to believe that their dead friends are conscious and suffering in a place called "purgatory" and that contribution of money by the living can help such suffering ones, and the people are thereby induced to part with their money to the priests, such is the meanest, crookedest, most damnable racket that could be practiced. No man has ever received the slightest benefit for money given over to priests to say prayers for the dead or for the living; therefore the obtaining of money by the priests or clergymen upon the claim that they can benefit the dead is obtaining money under false pretenses and should be punished like all other similar crimes.

The Catholic Hierarchy makes it a regular business to call upon the Catholic population for money to supply what is called the "purgatorial purse" and suggests the contribution of specific sums for each person for whom prayers are made. The amount received for each name submitted is almost always suggested according to the ability of those who contribute. Twenty-five cents a name is sometimes used, and sometimes far greater sums. But suppose twenty-five cents per name is contributed by each of the twenty million "Catholic population" in America, and that this contribution is made once a week, that makes a very large sum of money that is wrongfully extracted from the pockets of the people. But suppose the amount is a dollar a week per person, on the average; that would mean for twenty million persons one billion and forty million dollars per year. Persons of moderate means or much means, who are permitted to have an audience with the "august" clergy, contribute much more than a dollar per week each. The claim is made that the Catholic population of the world today is upward of 300,000,000, and if each of these is held up for twenty-five cents per week for the "purgatorial purse", that alone would amount to the enormous sum of \$3,200,000,000 per year. Add to that the other contributions that are regularly made to the Hierarchy, and, too, the weekly collections that are gathered in by the nuns from the laboring class, and it appears that there is a fabulous sum of money that continues to flow into the coffers of the

Hierarchy as a result of the operation of the great racket, a racket that is greater than all other rackets combined.

C O N T R A S T

Radio stations frequently broadcast programs calling attention to the various rackets or fakes that are now being imposed upon the people, by which large sums of money are collected from people who are credulous. For instance, a puzzle scheme is advertised by which the public are told that those who successfully solve the puzzle will receive so many votes, and thereafter, by expending more money, they may draw a very large prize. By this racket great sums of money are collected, and the prize is never paid; and then the police make a raid on the racketeers and arrest them. The United States post-office department issues an order prohibiting the use of the mails to carry on such a racket, and properly so. Contrast this with the "purgatory" racket. A Catholic priest publishes a letter telling Catholics that by contributing so much money they can aid their suffering dead in "purgatory". This letter advises the people that for each name submitted a certain sum should be contributed. The money is sent in regularly, paid over as a result of a false and fraudulent representation that it will result beneficially to the people. The United States government has a Roman Catholic as post-master general and in control of the post-office department, and who is in fact an agent and representative of the Vatican. Has anyone ever

heard of his issuing an order forbidding the use of the United States mails to carry on a racket of collecting money from the people upon the representation that it is for the benefit of the dead!

The "purgatory" racket is much more reprehensible than the prize racket above mentioned, because the people know they are gambling on the prize racket. As to the "purgatory" racket the credulous are taken advantage of, kept in ignorance of what the Scriptures teach, and prevented by the racketeers from knowing the truth, and then they are robbed of millions of money, and the post-office department piously folds its hands and says: 'This is doing a good work.' Does any sane and honest person believe that an organization or religious system that carries on such a racket could at the same time be the representative of God and Christ on earth? The proof is overwhelming that the claims and pretenses made by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization that it is the church of God are a monstrous lie, a great defamation of the name of Almighty God, and that the same are made for the purpose of robbing the people and turning them away from God.

REMISSION OF SINS

Another erroneous doctrine of the Roman Catholic church system is that the clergy of that system can forgive sins. The credulous Catholic population believe that the priest possesses such power from God, and, so believing, they go to the priest at regular intervals and

confess their sins that they may receive remission or absolution. One who commits the most heinous crime may do that and then straightway go out and commit another crime. A striking example is that of Mussolini. Until he made peace with the Roman Catholic Hierarchy he was an avowed atheist and a common gangster, but afterward he went to the Vatican and made an alliance with the papal system and then went forth and committed greater crimes than ever before. He carried on a cruel war of conquest of Abyssinia in utter violation of God's law, and no doubt received what the papacy calls "absolution" from the pope, because that "august official" attempted to "bless" Mussolini's war activities. Men who believe that the pope or the priests have power to forgive sins embrace and practice that religion to ease their conscience and to steel their conscience for further crime. Says the Catholic authority: "It follows, first, that the forgiving power was not restricted to the Apostles, but extended to their successors in the ministry unto all times and places. The forgiveness of sin was to continue while sin lasted in the world; and as sin, alas! will always be in the world, so will the remedy for sin be always in the Church. The medicine will co-exist with the disease."—*The Faith of Our Fathers*, page 333.

The Roman Catholic church system has assumed to perform this great act of forgiving of sins for a money consideration, and still does so. The foregoing authority further says: "Nor did the Pope exceed his legitimate powers

in promising to the pious donors spiritual favors in exchange for their donations. For if our sins can be redeemed by alms to the poor, as the Scripture tells us, why not as well by offerings in the cause of religion?"—Page 370.

"And the Church having power to remit the greater obstacle, which is sin, has power also to remove the smaller obstacle, which is the temporal punishment due on account of it."—Page 365.

Every person familiar with the Papal history needs only to have it called to his mind that one John Tetzel, a Dominican monk, became famous through Germany and other parts of Europe by reason of the fact that he sold indulgences for large sums of money whereby the purchaser was authorized to commit any or all kinds of crime with impunity. This racket has been carried on for so long a time that even the priests are convinced it is their inherent right to receive donations of money from the poor and from the rich upon the pretext that the priests have power to grant absolution or forgiveness for the commission of sin.

It is not at all surprising that the political and commercial ruling element of Italy, Germany, Austria and many other countries are supporters of the Vatican. Those men are steeped in crime, and they must have something to ease their conscience, and they are willing to pay for it. They are induced to believe that regardless of the crime committed they may receive absolution from the Papal Hierarchy. This racket, practiced by the Papal

(Colossians 1:14) Jesus conferred upon his faithful apostles specific authority concerning remission of sins, as stated in these words: "Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained." (John 20:23) This authority, however, is limited only to those faithful apostles, and applies to no one else before or after.—1 John 1:9; 2:1, 2.

No wonder the Roman Catholic Hierarchy advise the "Catholic population" to refrain from reading the Bible, but to take only what "the church" says. When honest and sincere people know the Word of God, they will break away from the Catholic system; and the racketeers know that, and when that happens their racket is done. The claim that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy priests have power to forgive sins is extremely blasphemous and is another part of their racket or scheme. Surely this racket could not be carried on with sensible and reasonable people if they were first informed in the Scriptures and believed in God and Christ Jesus. This is further and conclusive proof that the Roman Catholic church system is not the church of God, but that it is a Devil religious organization, carried on to the reproach of God's holy name, and works great injury to the people.

CEREMONIES

The Roman Catholic religious organization performs certain ceremonies or mere formalisms. On entering the cathedral the finger is dipped in what is called "holy water", and the

people are induced to believe that, even if that water had been pumped out of a pond, some man could make it holy. Then the man entering makes the sign of a cross upon himself; the priest then sprinkles the congregation with the same kind of water, reciting at the time parts of the Fiftieth Psalm, or some other scripture; then he proceeds according to the mass book (but not according to the Bible) by saying or repeating certain words in Latin, which probably no one present can understand. While doing this the priest wears peculiar clothing and continues to perform other acts, such as the above. Such is a religious practice, wholly unauthorized by the Scriptures, and a reproach upon God's name, but another means to induce the credulous to believe here is where they get their protection and salvation.

Hoping to find some authority for these senseless ceremonies the Roman Catholic Hierarchy cite the ceremonies performed by the Israelites in connection with the tabernacle. They ignore entirely, however, the Bible statement that those ceremonies performed by the Israelites were merely moving or living pictures performed under the direction of Jehovah, particularly foretelling things to come to pass in the future. (Hebrews 10:1; 1 Corinthians 10:11) Such types performed by the Jews were no authority for anybody to perform those ceremonies afterwards, because they pertained to the law and Jesus Christ fulfilled the law and nailed it to his tree. (Colossians 2:14) The ceremonies performed in connection with the tabernacle in the

wilderness particularly foretold the coming of Christ Jesus and his great sacrifice to provide the ransom price for the remission of the sins of men, and the presentation of his blood in the Most Holy, that is, in heaven itself, there to make satisfaction for the sins of the people.
—Hebrews 9: 20-24.

Christ having fulfilled the law, then the Devil institutes a ceremony in mockery of what the Lord has done, and causes his agents, the clergy, to carry on senseless ceremonies to overawe the people, falsely claiming the same find authority in the ceremonies performed in Israel. He puts it in the mind of selfish and sinful men to arrogate to themselves the power to do what Jesus alone had authority to do. When Christ Jesus came and performed his work, all such ceremonies as were practiced in God's law to Moses ended with His crucifixion. "Wherfore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith." (Galatians 3: 24) "For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth."—Romans 10: 4.

Those ceremonies performed by the Hierarchy priests result in great reproach to the name of the Lord God and in furthering the practice of their racketeering upon the people. Neither Jesus nor his apostles after him indulged in any kind of formalism or ceremonies. Jesus instituted the Memorial of his death, which is celebrated once each year as a reminder that those who have covenanted with God to follow in the footsteps of Jesus must be broken with

him and suffer as he suffered (1 Corinthians 11: 23-26; 10: 16, 17); and then the Catholic priests blasphemously attempt to change the emblems of wine and bread into the actual blood and body of Christ, and to induce the credulous ones to believe it, to the end that they may be further overawed and submit themselves to racketeering schemes.

Fixed and formal ceremony is entirely contrary to what Jesus instituted with his disciples. Such formalism is what the prophet of God referred to and what Jesus subsequently repeated, to wit: "Ye hypocrites! well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men." (Matthew 15: 7-9) This is further proof that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization is not the church of God, but represents God's enemy.

I M A G E S

In the ceremonies performed by the Roman Catholic organization they employ images. A Catholic authority says: "The Christian religion [not the Bible] has allowed the use of [images] statues and paintings to represent the incarnate Son of God, the saints, and angels, and these images are a legitimate aid to devotion." (*The Catholic Encyclopedia*, Volume 12) This practice of the Catholic church is diametrically opposed to God's law. Jehovah God expressly commanded that no image shall be made

and used. (Exodus 20:3-5) The use of images by the Hierarchy, therefore, further shows that the Catholic organization is not the church of God, because His church does not openly violate God's law. Jesus always obeyed God's commandments, and the members of his church must do likewise. To his people God gives this commandment: "Every man is brutish in his knowledge: every founder is confounded by the graven image: for his molten image is falsehood, and there is no breath in them. They are vanity, and the work of errors: in the time of their visitation they shall perish." (Jeremiah 10:14, 15) Of course, the Hierarchy would not wish the Catholic population to know that these texts are in the Bible, because that knowledge would ruin their racket.

But one says, "How about the statue showing Jesus Christ being crucified on the cross? Should not we have that kind of statue in our place of worship?" Jesus was not crucified on a cross. God's law provided that the accursed sinner should be hanged upon a tree. The Catholic priests know this, because their Bible so states. (See Galatians 3:13, *Douay Version.*) (Deuteronomy 21:22, 23) Jesus died in the place and stead of a sinner, and therefore as a sinner, although holy, pure and undefiled; and his death complied with God's law, and therefore must take place by his being nailed to a tree, and the facts show he was so nailed to the tree. "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written,

taining his relics." . . . The form of religious worship contains many points (veneration of relics, auricular confession, beads, processions, etc.) which bear a striking resemblance to practices of the Roman Church, acknowledged by all, but explained differently. . . . In the land of its birth, India, Buddhism had to endure a long-continued persecution, and was at last entirely driven out, after it had flourished there about twelve hundred years. The time of its introduction into the other countries is as uncertain as its early history in general.—McClintock & Strong's Cyclopædia, Vol. I, pages 907-910.

To bow before an image made of a cross is contrary to the Word of God, in violation of his law above cited, and is further proof that the Catholic church organization is not the church of God. Why pray publicly before an image of Christ and pretend you are praying to Jesus, when Jesus himself is fully alive in heaven! Teaching his followers to pray, he said: "But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do; for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking." (Matthew 6:6,7) Jesus then proceeds to outline a model prayer. (Verses 9-13) But the Hierarchy does not wish the common people to follow that.

The followers of Christ Jesus, who are of the church of God, therefore pray to God in the name of Christ Jesus, their Lord and Head, as directed by the Lord. (Matthew 6:9; John

The nation of Israel had God's favor because they were his covenant people, and that nation departed from the commandments of God, and their clergy taught them religion instead of God's commandments. Likewise in the early days following the death of the apostles of Jesus Christ, men who learned of God's purpose were greatly favored by him with some knowledge of his truth. It was then that ambitious men in the organization departed from the commandments of God and adopted and taught the doctrines of men and formed what is now called "the Christian religion", used and practiced in the nations called "Christendom". Within such religious organizations, and particularly within the Catholic organization or under it, there are many persons who desire to know and to serve God faithfully; and God will now give them an opportunity.

By his prophets Jehovah foretold the conditions which now exist and the record of which appears in the Catholic *Douay Version* of the Bible, and a part of it in that Bible reads: "For among my people are found wicked men, that lie in wait as fowlers, setting snares and traps to catch men." (*Jeremias 5:26, Douay*) These words of the Lord specifically describe the Roman Catholic "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction", which rules the underpriests and the "Catholic population", and which Hierarchy lays claim to being God's people. The honest people under the Hierarchy must now hear the truth, that they may flee from that wicked organization and find refuge under Christ Jesus, the Head of

Jehovah's organization. For that reason Jehovah sees to it that all such persons of good will, who desire to know and to obey him, shall have an opportunity to hear the truth.

Further describing those selfish, arrogant, boastful, cruel clergymen, the racketeers in the organization (or "house") which they rule, the Lord says to them: "Your iniquities have turned these things away, and your sins have withheld good things from you. For among my people are found wicked men, that lie in wait as fowlers, setting snares and traps to catch men. As a net is full of birds, so their houses are full of deceit: therefore are they become great and enriched. They are grown gross and fat: and have most wickedly transgressed my words. They have not judged the cause of the widow, they have not managed the cause of the fatherless, and they have not judged the judgment of the poor." —Jeremias 5: 23-28, Douay.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy have "houses" all over the earth within which they practice fraud and deceit, carrying on their racket, and by which the credulous, honest, sincere people are induced to wrongfully give up large sums of money, which has greatly enriched that organization. The money, therefore, has been obtained by fraud and in the name of God. Aside from the honest and sincere people of good will under the Catholic organization, there are millions of others claiming to be Christians, but who are not, and who are their religion for selfish gain. These include priests, politicians and other racketeers and prognosticators of what shall come







to pass. Those men indulge in what is a horrible abomination unto God, and therefore he continues to say to them: "Shall I not visit for these things, saith the Lord† or shall not my soul take revenge on such a nation? Astonishing and wonderful things have been done in the land. The prophets prophesied falsehood, and the priests clapped their hands: and my people [my pretended people, who practice religion for gain] loved such things: what then shall be done in the end thereof?"—Jeremiah 5: 29-31, Douay.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy have told the common people, or the "Catholic population", that they must not read the Bible; and clearly such is for the purpose of keeping the people in ignorance. It must now be apparent, to all honest people of earth who have any knowledge, that the Roman Catholic organization is a religious political organization, indulging in a selfish work, which blasphemous the name of Almighty God, falsely and fraudulently represents him, carries on a racket in the name of Christ, and is the great enemy of God and of the people. Carefully now consider what follows, and the Scriptures in support of the same, by which the Almighty God foretold exactly the conditions existing in this very day showing how the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is a selfish and devilish organization, operating under the misleading title of "Christian religion", and desperately attempting to gain control over all the peoples of the earth in order to satisfy its selfish and ambitious desires.

CHAPTER VI

"SONG OF THE HARLOT"

"Take a harp, go about the city, thou harlot that hast been forgotten: sing well, sing many a song, that thou mayst be remembered."—Isaiah 23: 16, Douay.

IT IS WRITTEN in the Scriptures: "Known unto God are all his works, from the beginning of the world." (Acts 15: 18) Necessarily that means that from the time of the beginning of the wicked world, over which Satan has been and is the invisible ruler, Jehovah God knew exactly what would come to pass and he made a record thereof in advance, and which record is called 'God's prophecy, written down by holy men of old, as God dictated to them'. (2 Peter 1: 20, 21) There is no limitation to God's fore-knowledge and power, and, of course, he could and did write prophecy exactly as it shall come to pass. Satan had flung the challenge into God's face, and that challenge was accepted (Job 2: 1-7), and therefore God from the beginning purposed what should come to pass in his own due time, and so he caused to be written in his prophecy these words: "I have spoken it, I will also bring it to pass; I have purposed it, I will also do it." (Isaiah 46: 11) To that end God caused his chosen people, the Israelites, and those who had dealings with that people, to

make certain motion pictures foreshadowing or foretelling what should come to pass in the future. God caused his faithful prophets to make a record thereof, writing the same in symbolic or cryptic phrase, of what the future would bring forth.

All prophecy was dictated by Jehovah God and is written in such a manner that no creature, not even the prophets who wrote, could understand the meaning thereof until God's due time to make the meaning clear. The out-working of God's purpose, as recorded in the prophecies, will bring salvation to all men who remain faithfully on the side of Jehovah God, maintaining their integrity toward him, and thereby they will participate in proving that Satan is a liar. As proof that the prophets and others did not and could not understand until due time, it is written: "Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: searching what, or what manner of time the spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it was testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. . . . which things the angels desire to look into."—1 Peter 1:10-12.

With the coming of the end of Satan's world, and when his rule should be first interrupted, the time came for unfolding these prophecies. This coming takes place at the time of the second coming of Christ Jesus, the Rightful Ruler who comes to the temple of God, and through whom God makes known the meaning of his

dulging in singing seductive songs to inveigle others into her trap, that she might have personal adulation and praise of men and at the same time reap also pecuniary gain.

The prophecy of Isaiah here considered discloses the great religious organization operating in the earth; and from about the beginning of the fourth century onward and until the year 1848 (A.D.) that religious organization attained to great and commercial power and occupied a prominent place amongst the temporal powers of the earth. She was for a time deprived of her temporal power and lost much prestige, and then the prophecy discloses that later she goes forth wearing her harlot garments and deports herself as a harlot, singing seductive songs like a harlot, by which she hopes and expects to regain her temporal power and influence amongst the nations of the earth; and the prophecy shows that for a time she succeeds. Then, when she appears to have reached the zenith of her glory, she boastfully says: 'Now I am at "peace and safety"; I need nothing.' That boastful declaration is followed by complete destruction of that wicked system, but the destruction is performed by the hand of Jehovah God through Christ Jesus. That great prophecy is now in course of fulfillment, and when we set the prophecy itself alongside the physical facts well known, everyone who loves God and serves him can understand the prophecy and will study it with the keenest interest.

"Harlot" is properly defined as a female committing adultery or fornication indiscriminately.

proval of God the Creator. At the beginning the children of Adam were not commercial. Then Cain began to practice religion, in this, that he adopted a form of worship, but without faith in God. He had no love for God, nor for the true worship of God. He brought unto God an offering for which offering God had no respect. Cain was not 'doing well', and Jehovah said to him: "Sin lieth at the door." (Genesis 4:3-7) Then followed the great crime of murder committed by Cain, and which was induced by religion. Since then religion and murder have gone hand in hand. There never has been a war but that the religionists attempted to bless the warring factions.

Politics and commerce or trade were quickly developed through religion, and this for selfish gain. Cain built a city and named it for his son Enoch, meaning "dedicated [to selfishness]". Then the grandson of Cain became "an instructor of every artificer in brass and iron", which were and are commercialized and used for military purposes. (Genesis 4:8-22) Due to religious practices in defiance of Jehovah God the human race became frightfully degenerate. The flood came and destroyed all practitioners of religion. Noah and his household remained true to Jehovah God, and they were the only survivors of the great deluge. Noah was "a preacher of righteousness", but never a religionist.—2 Peter 2:5.

In obedience to God's commandment Noah and his sons, following the flood, began to "multiply, and replenish the earth". (Genesis 9:1)

Soon after the flood religion again came prominently to the fore. Nimrod, the great-grandson of Noah, became the visible religious leader, and "he began to be . . . a mighty hunter before the Lord". That was the practice of religion, because it put Nimrod, a creature, "before" or superior to God, the Creator, and it was a religion to all of Nimrod's admirers and supporters. The purpose was to turn creatures away from Jehovah. With Nimrod religion began to be practiced after the flood. After religion politics was quickly employed and the political rule by Nimrod the religionist began. "And the beginning of his kingdom [political rule] was Babel." Then commerce quickly developed, which is evidenced by Nimrod and his sons' building cities and bringing together many people, which again required traffic amongst them.—Genesis 10:8-12.

The building of the city and tower of Babel was induced by religion, and this is clearly shown by the language of the builders. "And they said, Go to, let us build us a city, and a tower whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth." (Genesis 11:4) Bab-el, Babil and Babylon, all meaning the same thing (Genesis 10:10, margin), from the beginning stood for religion, politics and commerce, because the very express purpose was to turn men away from God in defiance of his commandment. The name Nimrod means "rebel" or "rebellious one" that rules. He named the beginning of his political kingdom Bab-el, which meant to him and his followers "The

Persons may escape his clutches and find a way to life and happiness.

The prophecy concerning Tyre applies to the Roman Catholic religious system. Zion, being a neighbor city, pictured other religions that consort with and operate with the Roman Catholic organization. The term "Christendom" is a word applying to those countries or nations wherein the so-called "Christian religion" is practiced. All religious systems called "Christian religion" properly take the name of the mother "harlot"; therefore the terms Babylon and Tyre apply to the lands known as "Christendom". Zion, having been built before Tyre, would well picture other religions practiced prior to the beginning of the Roman Catholic, and which co-operate with the Roman Catholic organization. With this introductory a detailed examination of the prophecy appearing at the 23rd chapter of Isaiah presents and those who have interest will pursue this study with a profit. If repetitions appear at different places you will see that such repetitions are here trying to drive home the point.

S E C O N D

The following is a summary of the 23rd chapter of Isaiah. It is taken from the American Standard Version of the Bible. The language of the original Hebrew is very difficult to understand. To interpret it by means of a different language is a dangerous thing. That prophet of God is a far greater expert than the translators.

Catholic religious system and in that system will have its fulfillment in completion. God has his own way to conceal the meaning of a prophecy until his due time to reveal it to those who love him. It often appears that the prophecy is recorded in the inverse order, that is to say, that which applies last to the fulfillment of the prophecy in completion appears in the record first, while that which applies first appears in the divine record last. At this point it seems well to examine some historical facts as they appear in the Bible, and which relate to ancient Tyre and the cities associated with her.

Zidon was a sister city of ancient Tyre. Men who built cities immediately following the flood named them for their sons, as it appears at Genesis 10: 1-6, 8, 15-19. From the Scriptures it appears that Nimrod was a cousin to the Zidonians and also to the Tyrians. Both cities practiced the religion which the Devil promulgated. It is written: "Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians" (1 Kings 11:5); also, "the gods of Zidon." (Judges 10:6) The Zidonians' religion dates practically from the same time as the building of Babel.—Genesis 10: 10, 19; 11:1-9.

Tyre was built by the descendants of Canaan, the cursed one. (Genesis 9: 25) The Hebrew word for "Tyre" is "Tsore", and means "rock". The city was built on a rock island, like a point in the sea, a short distance from the mainland of Phoenicia. It became a world-important center of commerce or traffic upon the seas. Doubtless the Devil chose this place, a rock, on which to build Tyre, in mockery of and as a mimic

lible and credulous people to the professional politicians and militarists. The religious institution known as the Roman Catholic Hierarchy claims that the head of that organization is infallible and can spiritually do no wrong, and yet it uses and practices religion and religious ceremonies to commercially gain material wealth and to wrongfully control the people. Its subjects, that is, the "Catholic population", must worship the religious institution, and at the same time those people are forced to contribute or pay money for the up-keep of the institution. "Organized Christianity" so called, or "organized religion", is generally understood to embrace the Roman Catholic Church, the Greek Orthodox Church, and the Protestant Church; but the Roman Catholic organization claims to be the original church, the mother of the so-called "Christian religion", and that the other religious systems are her daughters.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the ruling power of "Christian religion" so called, is the modern "prince of Tyrus", the members of the Hierarchy even giving themselves the title "the princes of the church". Modern Tyre, therefore, is organized religion, visibly ruling the people under its father the invisible ruler, "the king of Tyrus," who is the Devil. Jesus gave this plain statement concerning the practitioners of religion founded upon tradition: "Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a

and Arvad were thy mariners: thy wise men,
O Tyrus, that were in thee, were thy pilots."—Ezekiel 27:8.

Such vessels or instruments of the Hierarchy are used to hoodwink the common people and to deal with them and to keep them in slavery to the ruling power of the organization. Such underlings do the work of manipulating the common people or so-called "Catholic population", who pay the bills, and the "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction" reaps the commercial benefits. In his book entitled *The Faith of Our Fathers*, published first in 1876, Cardinal Gibbons says: "The number of Catholics in the world is computed at three hundred millions." (Page 10) The claim is now made that there are more than 20,000,000 of the "Catholic population" in the United States alone. Such constitute that which is symbolically designated "the sea", who bear up and support the organization; and the work of gathering the "Catholic population" under the organization and collecting the revenue from them is done chiefly by the underlings or underpriests, which vessels or "ships" ride upon the sea.

The following is a sample of what is constantly being done by the priests: A Catholic priest known as "Anthony O.M.C.", operating from Kentucky, sent out a letter to the credulous and superstitious believers in the false "purgatory" doctrine of the Catholic religion, which letter is dated Louisville, Kentucky, September 21, 1936. That letter calls upon the credulous ones in these words, to discharge 'your duty towards your dear departed, who, helpless

in their purgatory prison, crave the relief only Masses and Prayers can bring them. . . . Your offering will help to complete the Purgatorial Purse'. Attached to that letter is a paper or blank to be filled out and signed by all receiving it, setting forth the amount of money contributed for the purgatorial purse, and on that paper appear these words: "It is suggested that you send out or pledge an offering of 25c for each name listed." The paper or slip contains space for more than twenty names. Many of the "Catholic population" will contribute a much larger sum than that suggested. But suppose each one contributes 25c; that, according to the number of Catholics in the United States, would mean five million dollars, and, according to Cardinal Gibbons' estimate of the number in the world, would be more than fifty million American dollars annually. A very unique commercial scheme. It has been well said that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is the richest in material wealth of any institution on earth. Religion, commercialized, is truly the Devil's scheme, and God declares it so.—Ezekiel 28:16-18.

"HOWL"

The word "howl", as appears in the prophecy, clearly shows that a great calamity will come upon modern Tyre, that is, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization. A howl means a wail of great distress or despair. When is that howl to begin? From the Scriptures it seems certain that the complete fulfillment of this prophecy is at the beginning of Armageddon, that is, the

what will come to pass at Armageddon. The snarling or howling that took place in those years could in no way compare with the howl that will go up when Jehovah lays waste modern Tyre. When Jehovah, by his prophet, says: "Howl, ye ships of Tarshish, for it [Tyre] is laid waste"; when that comes to pass, such will cause modern Tyre to really howl. That howl will come when the Greater-than-Nebuchadnezzar, Christ Jesus, the Executor of Jehovah's purposes, the Mighty Warrior, goes into action at the beginning of Armageddon. It is true that there was an attempt by world powers in 1848 and 1870 to lay waste the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization, but that did not succeed. The permanent laying it waste will be such as to produce a mighty howl, and that will be at the beginning of Jehovah's "strange act".—Isaiah 28:21.

It is the command of Jehovah given to the ships of Tarshish to "howl, . . . for it [Tyre] is laid waste, so that [in Tyre] there is no house, no entering in". According to Rotherham the text is rendered thus: "For it is laid too waste to be a haven to enter." In other words, there is no haven to enter Tyre, because Tyre is destroyed. The howl is because incoming ships or vessels of Tarshish, laden with merchandise, could find no berth nor wharf, nor warehouse in which to put the merchandise intended for Tyre. Such is due to the fact that Tyre and her once favorable position in commerce and intercourse with other countries are ruined and the markets thereof wrecked. This is further proof

that 'the prince of Tyrus is a man and not a god'. (Ezekiel 28:9) It will then clearly appear that the text (Matthew 16:18) often misquoted, to wit, 'the gates of hell cannot prevail against it,' has no application whatsoever to the Roman Catholic church organization, but that such Scriptural text has been wrongfully applied by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to deceive the people, and that misapplication has resulted in deception and great injury to the people. No more will the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization carry on its work of 'encompassing sea and land to make proselytes for hell' (Matthew 23:15), because the modern Tyre will be done. That of necessity will come about by reason of the "strange act" of Jehovah in completely destroying modern Tyre, which is the Roman Catholic organization, so that none can seek her or enter her thereafter.

The "land of Cyprus", or island sometimes called "Chittim", was northwest of Tyre. Paul sailed from Zidon "under Cyprus, because the winds were contrary". (Acts 27:4) It was a near-by colony dependent upon Tyre. It was originally colonized by the Phoenicians from Tyre and Zidon. Says the prophet of God: "From the land of Chittim [Cyprus (*Roth.*)] it is revealed to them." (Isaiah 23:1) This would mean that the ships of Tarshish were bound for Tyre and laden with commerce and, while putting in at the port of Chittim or Cyprus, learned of the desolation of Tyre and that their ships were out of a job because Tyre was done for. The report of the fact shakes greatly the

sea!" (Ezekiel 27:32) "The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, and saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, and cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city? And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherin were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate."—Revelation 18:15-19.

Religion has been a means employed by the Devil to build his mighty organization on earth, which has deceived millions; and religion and religionists, according to the prophecies of God, will be the first of Satan's organization to be destroyed at the beginning of Armageddon.

D U M P O U N D E D

Jehovah, by his prophet, then addresses the supporters of Tyre, both ancient and modern, in these words: "Be still [silent (*margin*), dumb (*Roth.*)], ye inhabitants of the isle; thou whom the merchants of Zidon, that pass over the sea, have replenished." (Isaiah 23:2) This silence or dumbness is because of Jehovah's "strange act" then begun. (Isaiah 28:21) Many credulous

and gullible persons, and particularly the politicians and commercial giants, now look to the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the modern Tyre, to pull them through their difficulties, but when they see Jehovah strike down that organization, which has claimed to be invulnerable, they will be greatly astonished and disconsolate. Then in distress they will say, according to God's prophet: "We looked for peace, but no good came; and for a time of health, and behold trouble!"—Jeremiah 8:14, 15.

The words of Isaiah's prophecy here considered, to wit, "ye inhabitants of the isle" (vs. 2), manifestly mean in the final fulfillment those near the Hierarchy and who have been looking to the Hierarchy for help, protection and safety, even as Chittim or Cyprus was near to Tyre and depended upon Tyre. Those close or near-by and dependent upon the main organization, being of the same stripe, picture the Jewish and Protestant clergy and other allies of the Hierarchy who tag along behind the Hierarchy at the present time to do the bidding of the old "whore". (Ezekiel 27:8) They have helped to replenish the coffers of the Hierarchy, and hence Jehovah's "strange act" is against not only Tyre but the Zidonians and other allies, as he declares in his prophecy: "And all the kings of Tyre, and all the kings of Zidon, and the kings of the isles which are beyond the sea." —Jeremiah 25:22.

Today the so-called "Protestants" and the Jewish clergy openly co-operate with and play into the hands of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy,

like foolish simpletons and thereby aid the Hierarchy to carry on her commercial, religious traffic and increase her revenue. Commercial religion is the stock in trade of all such merchants. The Hierarchy takes the lead, and the simpletons follow. The Hierarchy is now taking the lead in compulsory flag-saluting, and in building images or monuments, such as what is now widely advertised to be built at Washington, D. C.; and the clergy of the so-called "Protestant" and Yiddish organizations fall in line and do what they are told, and when the "sackbut" sounds they fall down and worship. (Daniel 3:5) Poor simpletons!

The Devil's purpose, and therefore the purpose of his instruments, who are "enemies", in thus making merchandise of the people, is to keep them in subjection and to build up and support the Roman Catholic organization on earth. That part of the prophecy concerning "hire" or "merchandise" appears to have fulfillment during the period of time when the harlot sings, as marked in the record at Isaiah 23: 15, 16. This adds further force to the conclusion that prophecy cannot be understood until fulfilled or in course of fulfillment. But let it be understood and kept in mind that this prophecy will not be appreciated by merely casual reading. Careful study is required. The fulfillment does not come chronologically in the order of recording of the prophecy; but it appears better here to proceed with the study in the order in which the prophecy is recorded in the Bible, rightly dividing it in harmony with

for justice and law, for truth, and for equity before the name of his judgment. As here the fulfillment of this prophecy is found, chapter 15 and 16 record the fulfillment of his preceding words of the same chapter. It will therefore be this entire chapter to be taken up in our next chapter.

The meaning of verse 16 is that the sons of Levi, Deuteronomy chapter 10, commandments, are mentioned as obedient and "true unto him," being subject to his commandments, and that such are his best gifts in a kingdom or nation, one of his world. Since Jehovah has promised, "I will give you men of understanding." And he gives us in the word of wisdom (the gates of Shiloh) in the secret of the stone garment of the Ark of the Lord (Bethel), to have a man of understanding who is a craft of nations. Deuteronomy 33:11. The Lord said to Joshua, "Write me this people all these things in Egypt and in Canaan, and with power. Then I will bring them into Egypt, and I will subdue the land of Egypt, and over it which was brought into action and employed to separate the tribes of Jehovah first.

It is written concerning ancient Egypt that its annual revenue amounted to approximately £10,000,000 or that which is equivalent to that sum. Egypt was a great market for the commerce of the nations. Compare these facts with the commercial trade of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has, and for a long while has had, dealings with Big Business or mighty commerce of the world, members of the Hierarchy being large investors in the commercial trade of the world. The

Roman Catholic Hierarchy has been and is a market for all the world, dealing in and manipulating the people, and particularly the "Catholic population", and doing this for its own selfish gain. Politicians of all nations find the Hierarchy both politically and financially advantageous to them. Dictators in particular find a strong ally in the Hierarchy, and it will be generally found that these dictators are backed up and supported and put in power by the Hierarchy. Other religious organizations at the present, the Yiddish and Protestants, deal with the Roman Catholic Hierarchy because it appears to them to be to their selfish advantage.

Will the Yiddish and the Protestant clergy ultimately find it advantageous to link themselves to the Hierarchy and be dictated to by the Hierarchy of the Catholic organization? In answer to that question Jehovah says by his prophet: "Be thou ashamed, O Zidon [Turn thou pale, O Zidon (*Rothe.*)]; for the sea hath spoken, even the strength of the sea, saying, I travail not, nor bring forth children, neither do I nourish up young men, nor bring up virgins."—Isaiah 23:4.

Instead of being benefited those dupes and allies of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy will become pale of face and grow sick when they see the power of the Hierarchy yielding to Jehovah's "strange work", now being carried on, and they will be greatly shaken with shame and humiliation when they observe the beginning of Jehovah's "strange act". Recently the president of the United States has advised the adoption

of the "good neighbor" policy between all religious organizations and that they proceed in unity in their course of action. This will prove to be very bad advice, as many will later discover. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy now take the lead in an aggressive campaign against all who do not fall in line with their scheme, and in this campaign the other religious trail along. Every day today who will not support the religionists is denounced as "red" or "communist", even Jehovah's witnesses being classed by the religionists as such, although those religionists making these false charges well know that Jehovah's witnesses have no part whatsoever with the political affairs of the world. The Hierarchy follow the course of their father the Devil in making such false charges.



Author
of
religion

Under the Devil's wily and deceptive influence the people in general, which are used to bear up and support the religious systems that engage in traffic, have been deceived and blinded into following such a course. The time is certain to come, however, when the following part of the prophecy will be fulfilled, to wit: "The sea hath spoken, even the strength of the sea"; that is to say, the sincere people who love righteousness will break away from the religious prison house and speak against that wicked organization. Those who compose the "great multitude" (Revelation 7:9), as waters, are first turned away from the support of the religionists and give their devotion to Jehovah God and Christ Jesus. Then will follow in due time the masses who will renounce and turn away from and against the religionists. This prophecy shows that in God's due time the relationship of the sincere people with the religionists will be broken off. "The sea" (that is, the people used and exploited by the Devil to mother, nourish and support the religious systems, and who have been ruled) become the rulers or "kings" that will turn against the old "whore" and disclaim any relationship whatsoever to her.—Revelation 17:16-18.

Nebuchadnezzar, after laying siege to ancient Tyre, invaded Egypt. (Ezekiel 29:18-20) The fall of religionists, particularly the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization, will precede the destruction of the political and commercial elements of Satan's visible organization, and such will bring great pain and astonishment to the

bitter, as it is written. "As at the report com-
eering Egypt, so shall it be to sorely pained
at the report of Tyre" (Isaiah 23:5) The re-
port here mentioned is concerning the begin-
ning of Jehovah's "strange act". This text, as
applied to the Roman Empire, reads: "What
the report cometh to Egypt, they shall be sorely
pained at the report of Tyre." The fall of the
Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the religious organiza-
tion, will bring great pain to the remaining
portion of Satan's visible organization, because
they will lose the ability of Jehovah's Ex-
ecutioner to perform Jehovah's "strange act" at
Armageddon, and it will be evident to the re-
maining ones that they have no power to pro-
tect themselves and that their turn for destruc-
tion is next. This conclusion is abundantly sup-
ported by other scriptures. - Revelation 18:9-19.

Today Jehovah's witnesses in every part of
the earth are being persecuted by the Roman
Catholic Hierarchy and allies, and the Hier-
archy religious organization is the chief visible
instrument of the Devil which brings into action
against Jehovah's witnesses the political and
commercial elements, and together they seek to
make the burden great upon the back of those
who love and serve Jehovah. And now in this
hour of great distress the true people of Jebo-
vah God greatly rejoice because, true to the
promise of the Almighty God, greater hope and
strength is given to them by revealing to them
an understanding of his prophecy. "The Lord
will give strength unto his people; the Lord
will bless his people with peace." (Psalm 29:11)

Those who now devote themselves entirely to Jehovah and his King, and who continue to maintain their integrity toward God, rejoice to be counted worthy of suffering some of the reproaches that came upon Christ Jesus. They are fully advised that Christ Jesus the King is upon his throne and has gathered unto himself those of his royal house, whom he leads and comforts. Now Jehovah through Christ Jesus is revealing to his people a knowledge and appreciation of his prophecies hidden in times of old, and by this knowledge the faithful have increased hope.

Jehovah's due time having arrived to make clear the meaning of such prophetic pictures, he grants to those who love and serve him the privilege of seeing the meaning thereof. This privilege is not given to the selfish and super-critical ones, but to those who love God. In these "perilous times" God grants this favor to those who faithfully serve him, that they may have comfort and that their hope may be strong. The Roman Catholic organization, the mother and leader of religious organizations, is very arrogant, boastful, scornful and vicious, and acting in utter defiance of God's commandments. The vessels or instruments employed by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy who do the Hierarchy's bidding likewise act viciously and without regard to the rights of others and wholly contrary to the Word of God. The prophecy at the 23d chapter of Isaiah, at this point, continues to speak of the conditions of the Hierarchy and their allies, and the time is imme-

For they intended evil against thee; they imagined a mischievous device; which they are not able to perform." (Psalm 21:8-11) At the beginning of Armageddon Jehovah will execute that hypocritical organization.

The prophecy is then addressed to the subordinate parts of the enemy organization, the modern Tyre: "Is this your [Tarshish's] joyous city [mother organization], whose antiquity is of ancient days? her own feet shall carry her afar off to sojourn." (Isaiah 23:7) The Catholic Hierarchy is not at all joyous in Jehovah, although hypocritically and falsely claiming to represent God. It is joyous in its own merchandise and profits in the gay markets dealing in humankind. The Hierarchy and allied clergy employ all kinds of worldly schemes to entice the people and cause them to give up their money. In the church buildings they have, at stated intervals, concerts, Christmas cantatas, bazaars, socials, dances, athletics and like things in order to attract the people to join their church congregations and to relieve themselves of their money for the benefit of the religionists.

The words of the prophet are in the nature of a question addressed to the smaller parts of the Roman Catholic organization, calling direct attention to the vanity of the Hierarchy. To these smaller ones the prophet, in substance, says: 'Have you anything to exult in now, seeing that modern Tyre, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and allies and dupes, is in a wrecked and spoiled condition? You boasted that it was so solidly built and fortified that nothing could do

it serious damage. You boasted in its strength and relied upon it for protection and salvation and therefore automatically did its bidding. Modern Tyre, the Roman Catholic organization, has failed you.' Therefore says the prophet concerning Tyre: "Whose antiquity is of ancient days," Tyre was preceded by Zidon, this latter city being mentioned in Genesis the tenth chapter in connection with Babel, and it may well correspond to the religiousists of Pagan Rome, which merged into Papal Rome. Tyre, even in the days of Joshua, was called a "strong city" (Joshua 19, 29), and must have been founded on its rocky ground before the time of Joshua. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy claims that theirs is the oldest, the mother and the true church organization, because it is the oldest religious organization of "Christendom", and they cite in support of this claim that its antiquity dates from the time of Christ. It claims an unbroken chain of apostolic successors back to the apostle Peter; it calls itself "the Eternal City".

But what shall be the end of the Human Catholic Hierarchy organization, that is, modern Tyre? Jehovah, by his prophet, says: "Her feet shall carry her afar off to rapids" (Verse 7). It now thinks she is too ancient to ever have to move. But she is so thoroughly and completely entrenched in her position that no man can move her bulwarks, and for this reason she claims to be inviolable. Furthermore by his prophet, Jehovah says: "This is the Lord hath a mighty and strong city, such as a tongue of land, and a silvery

storm, as a flood of mighty waters overflowing, shall cast down to the earth with the hand. The crown of pride, the drunkards of Ephraim, shall be trodden under feet. . . . When the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it."—Isaiah 23:2, 3, 18.

Her arrogance and boasting attitude will bring her no good. Modern Tyre has existed for a long while and has practised her wickedness with little hindrance, and in the minds of her mighty men is entirely secure in her position; but, according to *Rotherham*: "Though from ancient days is her antiquity, yet shall her own feet carry her away, far off to dwell," that is, to remain permanently, by being removed from her place of existence into destruction, and there shall she remain for ever.

By his prophet Joel Jehovah speaks of the ill-treatment to which his covenant people have been subjected by modern Tyre, the Hierarchy of Rome. In this prophecy "Judah" and "Jerusalem" stand for the people of God's organization. During the World War the religionists, led by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, attempted to rid the earth of those who are and were devoted to Jehovah. Concerning this Jehovah says by his prophet: "Yea, and what have ye to do with me [Jehovah], O Tyre, and Zion, and all the coasts of Palestine? will ye render me a recompence? and if ye recompence me, swiftly and speedily will I return your recompence upon your own head: . . . The children also of Judah and the children of Jerusalem have ye sold unto

the Greeks, that ye might remove them far from their border."—Joel 3:4-6.

The day for the Hierarchy to pay comes, and the Lord God says to that Roman, scismatic, boastful and wicked religious organization, which has ill-treated his faithful children: "Behold, I will raise them out of the place whither ye have sold them, and will return your recompence upon your own head: and I will sell your sons and your daughters into the hand of the children of Judah, and they shall sell them to the Sabaeans, to a people far off: for the Lord hath spoken."—Joel 3:7, 8.

Jehovah always makes good his word. The day of recompense is absolutely certain to come, and the pay-off will be at the beginning of Armageddon, and the Hierarchy will find no way to avoid it. "Thus saith the Lord, For three transgressions of Tyrus, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because they delivered up the whole captivity [Jehovah's people] to Edom, and remembered not the brotherly covenant; but I will send a fire on the wall of Tyrus, which shall devour the palaces thereof."—Amos 1:9, 10.

With the beginning of Armageddon modern Tyre will cease, and no more will 'her feet carry her' and her missionaries to the many lands of the earth, there to seek new markets in which to exploit the people, but she will go to the place where she will remain permanently. Of that crowd of religious leaders, the Hierarchy, priests and other clergy, Jesus said: "Serpents, progeny of vipers! how can you escape the

judgment of the Gehenna!"—Matthew 23:33, *Emphatic Diaglott.*

The proselyting work of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and her vessels or instruments will cease then for ever. The words of Jesus will then appear applicable and appropriate to the Hierarchy and her supporters and tools: "Woe unto you [promoters and rulers of modern Tyre], scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of [Gehenna (*Diag.*)] than yourselves."—Matthew 23:15.

A question is then propounded by the prophet of Jehovah to all who have the hearing ear: "Who hath taken this counsel against Tyre, the crowning city, whose merchants are princes, whose traffickers are the honourable of the earth?" (Isaiah 23:8) Another rendering of this text is: "Who hath purposed this against Tyre, the bestower of crowns?" (R.V. and Itot.) These words further identify the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, because for centuries the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has claimed that the pope has the power and the authority to crown and to depose earthly kings. To those thus crowned and who have submitted to the domination of the religionists, the Hierarchy has been and is the "higher powers".

The Hierarchy demands the full obedience of each one of its underclergy, as well as obedience of the political rulers of many lands, and the Hierarchy bestows titles upon whomsoever that organization chooses to honor, and there-

by makes men "princes of the church", and these "traffickers", acting at the behest of modern Tyre, are the "honourable [men] of the earth". When one of those Roman princes visits America, for instance, the politicians, with bands of music and flags, meet him at the ship's dock, bow down, kiss his ring, and perform a lot of other senseless religious ceremonies. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy demands that the political rulers of the earth, the smaller priests, and the "Catholic population", the common people, shall regard the Hierarchy and speak of its members as "spiritual princes", who are in no wise subject to political rulers. Even a king or an earthly monarch is permitted to kiss the big toe of the so-called "holy father", the head of the Hierarchy.

Manifestly the question propounded at verse eight above quoted is to rivet attention upon the Hierarchy: "Who hath purposed this against Tyre?" The answer to that question appears below, and the language employed shows that it is at the time when Jehovah is exercising his power to punish the workers of iniquity, that is, modern Tyre, the Devil's chief instrument. The answer is: "The Lord of hosts hath purposed it, to stain the pride of all glory, and to bring into contempt all the honourable of the earth." (Verse 9) God plainly states: "I have purposed it, I will also do it." (Isaiah 46:11) Let no one doubt that God will carry out his purpose. Modern Tyre is made up of an arrogant, boastful, proud and scornful company and demands and receives high esteem and the

laudits of men. Jehovah's decree upon such is announced by the Lord Jesus, to wit: "That which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God." (Luke 16: 15) Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abused." (Matthew 23: 12) These fixed rules of Jehovah are not subject to change and are certain to be enforced against all who come within the scope hereof, and this certainly includes the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. It is Jehovah who has purposed the destruction of modern Tyre, the great religious "harlot" organization. And why? The scriptural answer is: "To stain ((A.R.V., margin) profane) the pride of all glory." Certainly his means all glory that has been taken away from God, to whom it belongs, and been bestowed upon creatures.

The men composing the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, or modern Tyre, 'clothe themselves in armaments of glory and beauty' and then "strut their stuff" in public places to be seen of men, that they may receive honor and glory of men. They consider that they are granting a great privilege to men to kiss their finger or toe. They fill themselves by high-sounding titles and claim that their glory and "holy" beauty is so sacred that it is a dreadful sin for anyone to profane or criticize their attitude or to teach the people anything of the Bible that calls attention to God's denunciation of religious hypocrisy. The proclamation of God's truth quoted from the Bible "shocks the religious susceptibilities" of those hypocritical clerical gentlemen and of all their allies.

It is written concerning Jehovah and his heavenly organization: "Out of Zion, the perfection of beauty, God hath shined." (Psalm 50:2) The Hierarchy fraudulently seizes upon this text and misapplies it, assumes to stand in the place of God, and claims for those of the Hierarchy the beauty and glory that belong only to the Lord. Therefore Jehovah declares his purpose to "humble the pride of all beauty".
—Rotherham.

That religious, mercantile, political, arrogant, extremely selfish and proud organization shall fall, as Jehovah God has decreed, to wit: "Say unto Tyrus, O thou that art situate at the entry of the sea, which art a merchant of the people for many isles, Thus saith the Lord God, O Tyrus, thou hast said, I am of perfect beauty." (Ezekiel 27:2, 3) The Hierarchy thus poses before all nations of earth. Her allies and her dupes sing of her glory and beauty, whether the singers believe it or not; the politicians do it because they want political support. All these vessels or instruments supporting the Hierarchy fall in line and shout of her glory and beauty. To them Jehovah says: "The ships of Tarshish did sing of thee in thy market; and thou wast replenished, and made very glorious in the midst of the seas."—Ezekiel 27:25.

But the day is not far distant when those singers and glorifiers of the Hierarchy and all her allied religionists will come to a sorrowful end, because Jehovah says: "Thy riches, and thy fairs, thy merchandise, thy mariners, and thy pilots, thy calkers, and the occupiers of thy

merchandise, and all thy men of war, that are in thee, and in all thy company which is in the midst of thee, shall fall into the midst of the seas in the day of thy ruin. The suburbs shall shake at the sound of the cry of thy pilots. And all that handle the oar, the mariners, and all the pilots of the sea, shall come down from their ships, they shall stand upon the land; and shall cause their voice to be heard against thee, and shall cry bitterly, and shall cast up dust upon their heads, they shall wallow themselves in the ashes. And they shall make themselves utterly bald for thee, and gird them with sack-cloth, and they shall weep for thee with bitterness of heart and bitter wailing. And in their wailing they shall take up a lamentation for thee, and lament over thee, saying, What city is like Tyrus, like the destroyed in the midst of the sea?"—Ezekiel 27:27-32.

To all the peoples of this world, who stand on the side and see the fall of the mighty religious organizations, it will seem 'very strange' that God would expose and destroy such, or that which the clergy have called by the name of the Lord. For many centuries the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has assumed the name of God and Christ, and claimed to be the only true organization of the Lord. But the Lord God marks their hypocrisy and says concerning that hypocritical organization: "Therefore will I do unto this house, which is called by my name, wherein ye trust, and unto the place which I gave to you and to your fathers, as I have done to Shiloh." (Jeremiah 7:14) God completely

destroyed all religious practices at Shiloh which bore his name.

Who on the earth today claims the exclusive right to use the radio and to speak to the people thereby, and to tell the people what they shall or shall not believe and do? Who are the ones claiming to be "the honourable [men] of the earth", entitled to the praise, honor and acclaim of all others? What class of men scornfully push aside all those who dare speak of God's Word without first obtaining their permission? To these questions the answer is, The Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and their allies or close associates. Jehovah declares that it is his purpose to "bring into contempt all [these] honourable of the earth", or "to make of little esteem" such exalted ones. (*Roth.*) The Hierarchy, the main organization, the Jesuits, the Nazis, the Fascists, the allied clergy, are the ones of whom the Lord speaks when he says: "Whose traffickers are the honourable of the earth."—Verse 8.

And what means will Jehovah employ to bring such "honourable" men into contempt? Such so-called "honourable" men are the instruments of Satan and therefore enemies of God, and in the battle of the great day of God Almighty, in the day of his wrath, he will destroy them. "Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven in the time of thine anger: the Lord shall swallow them up in his wrath, and the fire shall devour them. Their fruit shalt thou destroy from the earth, and their seed from among the children of men. (*Psalm 21:9, 10*) Jehovah's "strange work" is now exposing the duplicity and hypoc-

risy of those self-styled "honourable" ones; and his "strange act", at the beginning of Armageddon, will rid the earth of that hypocritical religious organization and will proceed to the complete wrecking of the entire organization of the Devil. As Armageddon begins, the destruction of religionists will appear to all who are not on the side of Jehovah and his King as "strange", very "strange".—Isaiah 29: 21.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy, that is, "the Hierarchy of Jurisdiction," which rules, claims to be the mother organization. Her supporters, agents, tools, vessels and instruments used, are her offspring or "daughters". Jehovah, by his prophet, now addresses the "daughter" class and says: "Pass through thy land as a river [as the Nile (R.V. and Roth.)], O daughter of Tarshish: there is no more strength." (Isaiah 23: 10) The river Nile passes through the entire length of Egypt and from time to time overflows its banks and floods the country round about; so Jehovah says to those addressed: "Pass through," that is to say, make complete inspection of the "work" and "act" of Jehovah and its effect; go and see for yourselves and verify all that his "strange work" does concerning the hierarchy and other clergy.

Jehovah has called his people to "rise up against her in battle" (Obadiah 1) and to proclaim God's judgment against the religious organization; and in the prophecy of Isaiah such is called "thy land", that is, meaning the organization to which the supporters or vessels give service and support. The parent organization

has colonized, supervised and appropriated its service and exploited those designated the prophecy as the "daughter". The fact that Tarshish should be told to pass through his own land on a sight-seeing or inspection journey to observe the effect of God's purpose as executed, indicates that God's "strange act", at the beginning thereof, will destroy the Hierarchy organization, that is, the inanimate corporation, and that some of the clergy under or beneath the "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction" will remain alive for a time and see the effects before they themselves are destroyed in the battle as it progresses.

To those survivors, for a season at the beginning of the battle of the great day, the Lord says: "There is no more strength [girdle (*margin*)]." The word here rendered "strength" is different from the word translated "strength" at verse 14 following. Says the *English Revised Version*: "There is no girdle about thee any more," that is, from the mother organization, modern Tyre, the "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction", because that system is laid low in the dust and can give no more support to its vessels. This is proof not only that the lower order of the clergy, which remain, which have been used as tools of the Hierarchy to do menial service to the 'organization of jurisdiction', will be made to drink of the cup of the bitter wrath at the Lord's hand, but also that the highest ones in the Hierarchy, including the "supreme pontiff", shall drink deeply, "spue [out], and fall."—*Jeremiah 23:27.*

Another translation of this text reads: "There is no restraint any more." (*A.R.V.*) The Hierarchy now puts restraint upon those who tell the truth about her and who inform the people about God's kingdom as the only hope of mankind. Jehovah's witnesses have now been commanded by the Lord to "rise up against her in battle", and in obedience to this command the faithful go forth amidst great opposition to declare the message of God of and concerning his purpose. Restraint does not stop them. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy brings to bear all its influence and power exercised by and through religionists, politicians and commercial men, and the courts, to restrain Jehovah's witnesses and to prevent them from telling the truth. When Armageddon begins, that restraint will be removed, and "no restraint any more" will be upon Jehovah's witnesses, because the witness work in the earth will then be finished and the marking and gathering of the "great multitude" by the Lord to himself will be completed.—*Revelation 7: 9-17; Ezekiel 9: 4-6.*

Until that time, as it is written, the "four angels" to whom it is given to "hurt the earth and the sea", continue to hold back the storm of the Lord. (*Revelation 7: 1-3*) The time comes when the restraint ends, and then there will be "no more restraint" upon the "ten horns" of "the beast", the political ruling classes, which shall turn upon the Hierarchy religious organization and rend it at the will of God (*Revelation 17: 16-18*), and then Jehovah's great Executioner shall completely wreck every part of

Satan's organization. Religion, which has so long brought reproach upon Jehovah's name and the religious organizations and their political and commercial laws shall completely pass away in the battle of the great day of God Almighty as it progresses.

As ancient Tyre built her commerce upon the sea and the coastlands round about, even so modern Tyre, the mighty religious system, has built her commerce upon the peoples all round about her, situated in her supposedly invulnerable place at the Vatican in Rome. The time comes for Jehovah's "strange act" to be executed, and, looking back upon the effects thereof, his prophet says: "He stretched out his hand over the sea; he shook the kingdoms; the Lord hath given a commandment against the merchant city, to destroy the strong holds thereof." (Isaiah 23: 11) The religious organizations boastfully claim both the sea and the land, but the claim thereof is false. "The sea is his [God's], and he made it; and his hands formed the dry land."—Psalm 95: 5.

At Armageddon, Jehovah, by his Executioner, rids the sea and the land of all of Tyre's trade ships, that is, her instruments, vessels and tools, supporters and dopes. He reaches out to the most distant established settlements of modern Tyre and wipes them out. Says the Lord by his prophet: "He shook the kingdoms," that is, all the ruling powers of the earth, whose kings committed fornication with Tyre, the old whore, for mutual benefit to enrich themselves. Those kingdoms will not be able to stand up under

Jehovah's shaking, but will be shaken to pieces and destroyed. (Haggai 2: 21, 22) The old whore goes first into the ashcan, and then the others follow. "And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters; with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth" (Revelation 17: 1, 2, 16-18; 18: 3) "The king of Tyrus," the Devil himself, and all of his kingdom shall be completely shaken down and destroyed.—Ezekiel 28: 12-19.

Jehovah gives command to his high officer, Christ Jesus, to execute the wicked organization, and concerning this the American Revised Version (Isaiah 23: 11) reads: "Jehovah hath given commandment concerning Canaan [merchant-men (E.R.V., margin)]," that is, the coast of Canaan occupied by Tyre and Zidon. According to Rotherham the text reads: "Command against the Phoenician coast." The command to Christ is given to "destroy the strong holds thereof".

One of the most powerful strongholds of the coast of Canaan was Tyre, and Tyre was specially mentioned in the command to destroy. (Jeremiah 25:22) Modern Tyre, the Roman Catholic organization, is one, and probably the strongest one, of the strongholds of Satan's visible organization. No stronghold is so strong, however, as to be able to withstand the assault of Jehovah's Executioner. Christ Jesus possesses the keys to hell (Revelation 1:18), and hell shall not prevail against him and his organization. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has wrongfully adopted and applied the words spoken by Jesus concerning his organization, to wit: "The gates of hell shall not prevail against it" (Matthew 16:18); but the day is not far distant when the Hierarchy will see her complete end and will fully know the day of deceiving others has come to a final end. To those who love and faithfully serve Jehovah he now gives this information in advance of the fall of that hypocritical and wicked organization, to the end that such faithful may be comforted and have increased hope.

Viewing the prophecy of the twenty-third chapter of Isaiah as a whole, it appears that the period of rejoicing by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy precedes Armageddon, and just a short time before the beginning of Armageddon. The time arrives when the rejoicing of that religious system must cease, because Jehovah has so decreed; and therefore he caused to be written: "And he [Jehovah] said, Thou shalt no more rejoice, O thou oppressed virgin, daugh-

ter of Zidon; arise, pass over to Chittim; there also shalt thou have no rest." (Isaiah 23: 12) Since the prophecy is "the burden of Tyre", it appears that it is Tyre that is addressed as the "oppressed virgin, daughter of Zidon". The city of Zidon was built first, and Tyre would be viewed as a daughter. Zidon had a devil religion. Pagan religion preceded the papacy, and many of the devilish practices of paganism were adopted by the papacy, and both originated with and are the children of the Devil.

Tyre would be viewed as a "virgin" daughter because not legitimately married but unclean from fornication, her chastity having been "violated". (Rotherham) To that violation of her chastity she consented, and she therefore would be the "oppressed". The Roman Catholic religious organization has practiced whoredom with "all the kings" or ruling powers of the earth of Satan's visible organization, but the time comes, just preceding the beginning of Armageddon, when the Lord convinces the "ten kings" or ruling forces of the nations, which turn on the harlot religious system, and that system becomes greatly oppressed. God puts it in the mind of the ruling powers to fulfill his will.
—Revelation 17: 16, 17.

The time arriving for her great oppression to begin, the Hierarchy system will seek rest somewhere, and, because thus seeking, Jehovah says to her: "Arise, pass over [the sea] to Chittim," 'and see if you can find rest there.' Chittim, being near to Tyre, would represent any subsidiary or auxiliary organization where

the old woman might seek rest and relief and find none. This would seem to indicate that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy system will be seeking a place of consolation and therefore abasing herself by going to some lesser organization, seeking a way to escape the deepest abasement, which is certain to come upon her by reason of being cast into Gehenna. (Matthew 23:12) Will the Hierarchy system find rest there? Jehovah replies: "There also shalt thou have no rest."

From time to time the Hierarchy system has had some setbacks or losses of temporal power, but she has always claimed that such setbacks were only temporary. She claims that she is eternal, cannot suffer destruction, and therefore she can afford to wait out any temporary setbacks while she schemes to advance her position. The abasement or opposition to her in the past the Hierarchy has claimed to be that "little season" during which Satan is loosed, at the end of which she will triumph. (Revelation 20:3,7) Again she is wrong in her conclusion. The time for her complete humiliation is near at hand, and there is no way for her to stop it now, and therefore there is no way for her to escape. Not even the individual members of that religious clergy crowd will be able to disguise themselves by putting on overalls and thus hiding their identity. (Zechariah 13:4-6) They will not escape the scrutiny of others, and certainly not God's executive officer. There is no rest short of complete destruction, from which she shall never again rise.

Jehovah used the Chaldeans, of whom Nebuchadnezzar was the king, as His executioner, who thus foreshadowed Christ Jesus, the great executioner of Jehovah who shall execute the devil religion, and particularly the Roman Catholic system. (Ezekiel 26: 7-14; Jeremiah 25: 9, 17, 22) Therefore Jehovah says to the observers: "Behold the land of the Chaldeans; this people was not *till* the Assyrian founded it for them that dwell in the wilderness; they set up the towers thereof, they raised up the palaces thereof; and he brought it to ruin." (Isaiah 23: 13) The words "Behold the land of the Chaldeans" manifestly direct the attention to his executioner that executes the judgment of Jehovah upon the Hierarchy system. Then the prophet says: "This people [that is, the people of ancient Tyre and of modern Tyre, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy] is no more."—E.R.V.

The word "*till*", as appears in the *Authorized Version*, is an interpolation, and the correct rendering appears in the *Revised Version*. Therefore, as stated in the text, the ships of Tarshish calling at the port of Chittim, the island near Tyre, would have no reason to proceed on to Tyre because of the information received at Chittim that Tyre no longer existed. Likewise in the antitype or fulfillment, the underpriests, missionaries and other subsidiary organizations are told that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy system is no more, that is, "the Hierarchy of Jurisdiction" is done for and hence there would be no occasion to further seek her. It is plainly written by another prophet that the end of the

Hierarchy will be complete destruction; that is, "they shall be as though they had not been."

—Obadiah 16.

Since the word "till" is an interpolation, and therefore improperly in the text, that part of verse thirteen following the word "till" is no part of the preceding sentence. Therefore the words after "till" read: "The Assyrian [Asshur (*Leeser*); *Assyria (Rotherham)*]) founded it" The word *Asshur* appearing in this part of the text means "successful one", as in Genesis 10:11.

In Isaiah's day the Assyrian world power still held the upper hand over the Chaldeans; but in Jeremiah's time, and eighteen years before the fall of Jerusalem, Nebuchadnezzar had become king of Babylon and established the Babylonish empire. (See Isaiah 39:1-8.) Therefore the words in Isaiah 23:13, to wit, "The Assyrian founded it," clearly mean the Chaldeans or Babylonians. "The Assyrian" pictures God's Executioner, Christ Jesus. Note that "the Assyrian" as a nation did not establish or found "the land of the Chaldeans". Babylon preceded Assyria. It is said in connection with Nimrod: "And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the lan'l of Shinar. Out of that land went forth Asshur [*i.e.* went out *into* Assyria (*margin*)], and build-ed Nineveh, and the city Rehoboth, and Calah." Another author (Hislop) renders the text: "And he, being strengthened, went out of the land and built Nineveh," the capital of Assyria.

With this explanation, note that the English Revised Version of the text (v. 13) reads:

The Assyrian hath appointed it [(Auth. Ver.)
judged it]," that is to say, appointed "this
topic" of Tyre. Appointed the people of Tyre
or what or for whom? The prophecy answers:
"for the beasts of the wilderness." (L.L.V.)
Clearly this means that God's Executioner, pre-
pared by the Assyrian, hath "appointed" modern
Tyre (that is to say, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy
organization and its clergy and allies)
a place or condition uninhabited by persons
wholly for brute beasts, hence for desolation.
In support of this conclusion, note the words
Revelation 18: 2, 3: "And he cried mightily
th a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great
fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation
devils [wild goats, satyrs], and the hold of
ery foul spirit [stinking vapors arising like
partitions out of a marshy, foul and corrupt
id], and a cage of every unclean and hateful
id [in place frequented by birds decreted by
law of God unfit for human habitation]. For
nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath
her fornication, and the kings of the earth
re committed fornication with her, and the
richants of the earth are waxed rich through
abundance of her delicacies." This text, with-
a doubt, applies to Satan's religious organ-
tion, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy being
principal part thereof. Therefore the proph-
of Isaiah discloses that Jehovah's Execu-
ier has "appointed" that Devil religious
anization for desolation in accord with the
ree or judgment heretofore written at the
ation of Jehovah.

Hierarchy falls. Says the *Revised Version*, verse fourteen: "Howl, ye ships of Tarshish; for your stronghold is laid waste." The "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction", which operates in and out of Vatican City, Italy, is by the Lord Jehovah's decree certain to be laid waste; and that "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction", the central government of the religious system that for centuries has deceived the people and blasphemed God's name, will go down. When that stronghold does go down its importers can do nothing but howl. Armageddon will mark the complete fulfillment of the foregoing prophecy of Isaiah twenty-three, verses one to fourteen.

APPARENT FULFILLMENT

It has been suggested that verses one to fourteen of Isaiah 23 describe certain adverse experiences to which the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has been subjected during a period of twenty years, from 1848 to 1918, and during which time she is forgotten and her howl is ard; that at the end of that period the Roman Catholic Hierarchy again comes to the fore; and hence that the latter part of the prophecy recorded in the twenty-third chapter applies after the fulfillment of the first part of the prophecy. The facts do not fit that conclusion, the reason that the "howl" of Tyre clearly refers to what comes to pass at the beginning of Armageddon. There is, however, an apparent fulfillment of the prophecy concerning the "howling of the ships of Tarshish" or supporters of her, within the seventy-year period above men-

tioned, from 1848 to 1918; but instead of being a fulfillment it would better be termed an agreeable parallel on a minor scale to that stated in the prophecy.

It seems well to here set forth certain pertinent historical facts that came to pass during the seventy-year period from 1848 to 1918, in order that the student may consider the same in studying the prophecy; and which consideration may remove some doubt that might otherwise exist. Such historical facts here inserted are quoted from well-known and recognized authorities. They relate to the Roman Catholic religious system from 1848 to 1918 and are as follows:

HISTORICAL

1848. January: Revolutions in various states on Italian peninsula. February 22-24: Revolution in France; King Louis Philippe out; republic is proclaimed. March: Revolution in Austrian Empire. Revolutionary movements in Germany. Insurrection at Rome; the populace demand a democratic ministry and the proclamation of Italian nationality; the pope [Pius IX] hesitates; the Romans surround the palace, and a conflict ensues. The pope accepts a popular ministry (Cardinal Palma, the pope's secretary, shot in this conflict) . . . November 16. November 20, a free Constitution published. November 21, the pope escapes in disguise to Gaeta. November 23, protest of the pope against the acts of the provisional government (of Rome).

1849. February 8, the Roman National Assembly divests the pope of all temporal power, and adopts the republican form of government. February 18, the pope appeals to the Catholic powers (of the world). "He now enjoyed the sympathy of the reactionists all over the world who had looked so coldly upon his early efforts at reform, but gained, of course, the execrations of the liberals, whose cause he had abandoned. Rome, left without a ruler, bloomed into a republic. The pope protested against all its acts, and summoned the Catholic world to put it down." (McClintock & Strong *Cyclopædia*, Vol. VIII, "Pius IX") June 3, the French under Marshal Oudinot commence an attack on Rome. June 30, after a brave resistance, the Romans capitulate to the French army. July 4, the Roman Assembly dissolved, and an officer from Oudinot's camp arrives at Gaeta, to present the pope with the keys of Rome.

1850. April, the pope arrives at Rome; Cardinal Antonelli becomes foreign minister. "The pope returned in April, 1850, surrounded by the bayonets of a French army. . . . His first act was the perfidy of destroying the constitution of chartered rights which he had guaranteed to his subjects. . . . The Inquisition recommenced its sacred labors. . . . the Bible was prohibited." (McClintock & Strong *Cyclopædia*, Vol. VIII, "Pius IX") September 24, he issues the bull establishing a Roman Catholic hierarchy in England.

1861. March 27, Cavour claims Rome as capital of Italy. June, the emperor of France de-

clines a union with Austria and Spain for the maintenance of the pope's temporal power. "In 1868, the Austrians broke the concordat and declared their spiritual emancipation. The year after, Queen Isabella was driven out of Spain, and the government of the people refused to be bound by any previous treaties with the papacy [September 29, 30]." [February 16, 1873, the first Spanish republic is proclaimed at Madrid, Spain].—*McClintock & Strong Cyclo-pædia*, Vol. VIII, "Pius IX."

1870. September 11, the pope refuses terms offered him by the king of Italy (sovereignty of the Leonine city and retention of his income). September 20, after a brief resistance from the foreign papal troops, stopped by order of the pope, the Italian troops under [General] Caderma make a breach and enter Rome. September 21, Cardinal Antonelli issues a diplomatic protest against the Italian occupation of Rome. September 26, protest of the pope (Pius IX, still). September 29, circular letter from the pope to the cardinals complaining of the invasion and of his loss of liberty, and interference with his post bag. October 2, plebiscite: out of 167,548 votes, 133,681 for [Rome's] union with the kingdom of Italy. October 8, result of the plebiscite sent to the king [of Italy]. October 9, Rome and its provinces incorporated with the kingdom by royal decree.

"In 1870, finally, the war with Prussia destroyed the empire in France, and with the fall of [Louis] Napoleon not only the French refused to be bound to Rome, but the gates of the

Eternal City opened to all Italy. . . . Notwithstanding all efforts of [King] Victor Emmanuel for peace, the pope sternly persisted in his firm protest against the inevitable change of things. . . . He lived retired in the Vatican, and called himself a prisoner.—*McClintock & Strong Cyclo-pedia*, Vol. VIII, "Pius IX."

1871. May 13, law guaranteeing to the pope full personal liberty and honors, a revenue of 3,225,000 livres, &c.; rejected by the pope in his allocution, May 15. October 27, allocution of the pope, appointing some Italian bishops; still rejecting guarantees.—*Haydn's Dictionary of Dates*, under "Rome," "Popes," "France," "Spain," &c.

1878. February 7, Pope Pius IX dies. "On Feb. 7, 1878, he died, after a protracted dropsical illness. . . . The missions of the Church were also strengthened, being carried forward *in partibus infidelium*, and great hierarchies, in lands formerly heathen or Protestant, were added to the vast clergy that owned 'the Latin obedience.' Thus he provided by brief of 1850 for the ecclesiastical government of England, . . . exulting in the supposed triumph of his Church in the land which had been the home of the Reformation for three centuries. Then he created in this country [U. S. A.] a vast Roman Catholic hierarchy by elevating to the cardinalate the archbishop of New York in 1875, and prepared the way for the re-establishment of the hierarchy in Scotland, which was effected in 1878. . . . One of the foulest blots on the pages of history regarding his reign is the for-

cible conversion of the Jew boy Mortara, and of a piece with this is the abject condition of the Hebrews at Rome, where the walls of the Ghetto were only removed with the establishment of the Italian power."—McClintock & Strong Cyclopaedia, Vol. VIII, "Pius IX."

"He also established four new dioceses in the United States at Albany, Buffalo, Cleveland and Galveston, all in 1847. In later years he established nearly 50 others in medium-sized American cities. . . . Matters were now going too fast and too far for Pius, who refused to countenance the revolutionary movement. . . . The pope now entirely lost the favor of the Roman populace. Threatened by the mob in his own palace he fled to Gaeta, and a Roman republic was proclaimed in February 1849, with Mazzini at its head. Louis Napoleon, determined to restore the pope, sent an expedition to Rome under Oudinot, by whom the Italian patriots, led by Garibaldi, were overpowered. Rome surrendered on 3 July; but the pope did not return to his capital till April 1850. . . .

"The pope himself now bestowed his whole attention upon the church. He recalled the Jesuits, canonized saints and defined two dogmas. . . . in 1851 . . . in 1870. Previous to this time the pope's temporal dominion had become sadly shrunken in extent, owing to the gradual unification of Italy under Victor Emmanuel. The temporal power of the pope, however, was still secured by the presence of a body of French troops at Rome. . . . On 20 September 1870 the Italian troops entered Rome, and the temporal

POWER WAS AT AN END. The Vatican was left to the pope; and free diplomatic intercourse, the honors due to a sovereign, and a civil list of £129,000 yearly, secured to him. But these he declined, and confined himself to the Vatican and its garden, declaring that he was under restraint and a prisoner in his own palace."—*The Americana*, Volume 22, "Pius IX," page 137.

1878. March 4, Romanist hierarchy revived by pope; archbishopric of Glasgow, bishop of Dunkeld, &c. This was about a month after the death of Pius IX, pope for almost 32 years.

"In November, 1848 [the year of the flight of Pius IX to Gaeta], the German bishops of the Romish body assembled at Würzburg, to consult together concerning the best means to proceed in this critical period. . . . Shortly before this, however, an organization of far-reaching significance had been effected, in which also—and prominently—the laity were to co-operate, viz., the Pius Society, a Roman Catholic counterpart of the Protestant Church Diet. . . .

"In October, 1848, at Mayence, . . . the first union of this kind was formed under the name of Pius Society. Here all the single unions were formed into a great collective union under the name of 'Catholic Union of Germany'; although in practice the shorter name of Pius Society has been preferred. . . . A second assembly was held at Breslau, where the papal letter was received, and where the assembly openly expressed it that 'A UNITED GERMANY WAS ONLY POSSIBLE WITH A CATHOLIC CHRISTIANITY.' Here a new society was also organized, the Vincentius So-

society, for missionary work at home. . . . In the United States there is hardly a large town in which one or the other of these societies is not to be found. The tendency is the same, although the name may be different. The purpose of these organizations IN THE UNITED STATES IS TO BRING THE STATE AS MUCH AS POSSIBLE UNDER THE INFLUENCE AND CONTROL OF THE HIERARCHY, and the political arena is the field of labor. Already they influence the legislatures, school-boards; yea, we may say they form a STATE WITHIN THE STATE."—McClintock & Strong *Cyclopaedia*, Vol. VIII, "Pius Societies."

1914. September 3, Cardinal della Chiesa was elected the successor of Pius X and took the name of Benedict XV. 1917. August 1, Benedict XV issued his "famous peace note", "which President Wilson answered on behalf of the Allied and Associated powers, saying that the ideals which the pope had expressed were their ideals, but that the Central Powers appeared unwilling to acknowledge or accept them."—*The Americana*, Vol. III, "Benedict XV."

1918. November 11, beginning of great war-chest drive in the United States, in which seven organizations participate. "There is, of course, widespread dissatisfaction with the arrangement—most especially because the Catholic War Council, which includes the Knights of Columbus, will receive \$30,000,000. The position is taken by those who object to the united budget that the Knights of Columbus, as an organization, has no more right to cantonment and trench privileges than have other secret societies, and

that the Catholic church should have no privileges in the camps and on the field that are not extended to other religious bodies. . . . The Catholic church, in particular, will stand out in the open as a political organization which, during the entire length of the war, left no stone unturned to advance papal interests. . . . And among the charges to be preferred against the Catholic church after the war will be her peculiar participation in cantonment and trench privileges, and the mandatory method by which she secured a place in the war chest"—*The Apostolic Review*, November 19, 1918.

1918. November 30, the New York *Evening World* says the pope desires to attend the peace conference in order that he may gain some "temporal power", and adds that the Vatican is seeking to establish a private telegraph office in the Vatican with private wires to all governments, so as not to have to use the Italian telegraph lines.—*The Watchtower*, Jun. 1, 1919, pages 4, 5.

1919. January, Benedict XV completely frees Italian Catholics from all inhibitions against participation in Italian political movements. His relations with the royal court of Italy were more cordial than those of any pope since 1870, and the celebrated "Roman Question" was left by him in a fair way of settlement. At the beginning of Benedict XV's "reign" about 20 nations had formal diplomatic relations with the Vatican. At its close, in 1922, there were more than 31. Relations with France had been restored, and the British Empire had taken steps to have a more intimate representation. Negotiations

were pending for an exchange of envoys with Tokyo, Japan.—*The Americana*, Vol. III, "Benedict XV."

1919. March 11, an Associated Press dispatch from Paris read as follows:

"It has become known that Pope Benedict has addressed an appeal to the powers emphasizing the urgency of the speedy conclusion of peace with Germany. It is understood that the pontiff states that the Vatican possesses reliable information that the situation in Germany, socially and economically, is very grave, and that he fears the spread of Bolshevism with such rapidity that it might result in the establishment of a Bolshevik state, which, in turn, might become allied with Bolshevik Russia."—*The Watchtower*, April 1, 1919, pages 100, 101.

1919. March 23, the first meeting of Fascists in Milan, Italy. May. Adolf Hitler attends his first Nazi meeting in Munich, Germany. September, the National Catholic Welfare Conference [Council, formerly] (NCWC) is organized in the United States.

At the close of the World War, in 1918, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy realized the opportune time had arrived to begin efforts toward regaining temporal power previously had by that institution. The Hierarchy did begin her efforts then which culminated successfully on February 11, 1929, when it was publicly announced that the papacy's temporal power had been restored.

Now it is important to determine, if possible, what is the meaning and application of the "sev-

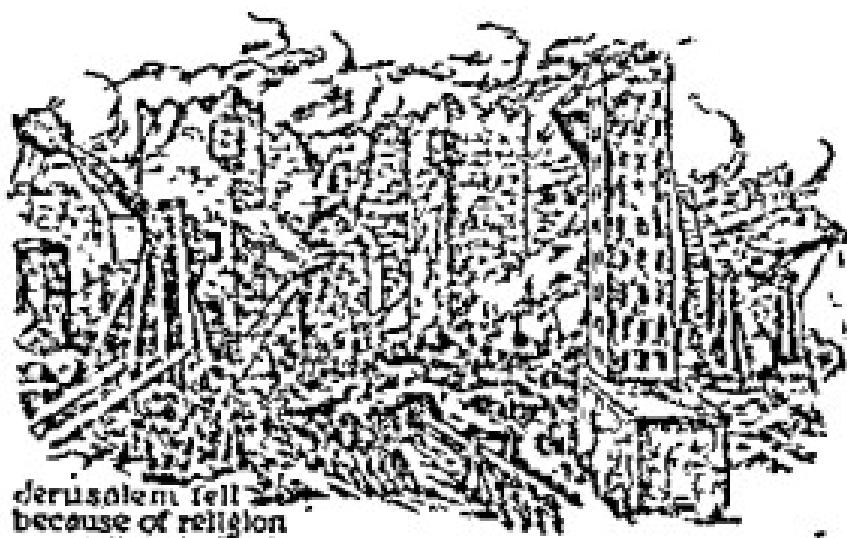
"**ty years**" mentioned in the prophecy (Isaiah 1:15); what is meant by the harlot's being forgotten, and what is the meaning of "the song of the harlot". Suffice it to say at this point of our study that the prophecy appearing at verses 15 and 16 has fulfillment before the beginning of the "howl", as mentioned in verses 1 to 14, which "howl" clearly marks the beginning of the battle of the great day of God Almighty. Jehovah's day' is a term used in prophecy and relates to the time when Jehovah enthrones his commissioned King and sends him forth to rule. (Psalms 2:6; 110:2) It is also referred to in the Scriptures as "that day". It marks the time when Christ Jesus the King began to interrupt the rule of Satan which he had so long reigned on unhindered. It is marked by the beginning of the "war in heaven", which resulted in the ousting of Satan and his angels from heaven and casting them down to the earth. (Revelation 12:7) Practically at the same time the World War began on the earth. It is the time of the beginning of Satan's overthrow, which ultimately culminates at Armageddon. Reference to that time is made in the prophecy of Isaiah 23:15, where it is written: "And it shall be to pass in THAT DAY." At this point the prophecy in fulfillment moves back from a consideration of the things that will come to pass at the beginning of Armageddon and gives consideration to things or causes directly provoking that conflict. The time for the beginning of the fulfillment of this part of the prophecy Isaiah 23:15 is in the year 1914 (A.D.),

when the war began in heaven. (Revelation 12:7) As shown by the historical facts, in the year 1914, and for several years prior thereto, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy did not rate as a temporal ruling power in the earth. During that period of time it was claimed that the pope was "the white prisoner" at the Vatican.

Seeing that ancient Tyre pictured the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization as it now exists, and which is therefore modern Tyre, it will be of aid in the examination of the prophecy if we keep in mind the objective or chief purpose of the Hierarchy, which purpose is, to wit: To rule over the nations of the earth as the claimed representative of Christ, with the false slogan "Christus Rex", that is, Christ the King, meaning, in fact, the pope, the head of the Roman Catholic "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction" on the earth. Such has been the objective of the Roman Catholic organization from the beginning, but she has received setbacks from time to time, which the organization attributes to the opposition by her enemies.

Says the prophet of Jehovah: "It shall come to pass in that day, that Tyre [modern Tyre, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization] shall be forgotten." Forgotten by whom? By her former illicit paramours who have committed fornication with her. She is forgotten for time as a temporal power. The political ruling powers counted her out as regards temporal power, viewing the pope as merely a spiritual

adviser, without much influence, not to be feared. It does not necessarily follow that the Hierarchy is "forgotten" for seventy years. The prophecy clearly fixes the time when she is forgotten, by saying: "*In that day . . . Tyre shall be forgotten.*" A comparison of the language of verse 15 with that of verse 17 more clearly shows this: That there is a period of time in which the harlot is forgotten and that time of forgetting her of which the prophecy takes notice is "*in that day*", that is, the day of Jchovah; and that it is at the end of seventy years that the Lord will visit Tyre. The Lord's visit to Tyre manifestly is not for her upbuilding, but for her adverse judgment, which visit begins with Jehovah's "strange work" and concludes with the beginning of Jehovah's "strange act".—Isaiah 28: 21.



following historical fact: "London, Treaty of (1915). A secret agreement concluded between Italy, France, Great Britain and Russia on 26 April and finally signed on 9 May 1915, declaring the terms under which Italy agreed to enter the war on the side of the Entente Allies. 'By the future treaty of peace' Italy was to receive the Trentino, the whole of Southern Tyrol, as far as its natural and geographical frontier, the Brenner Pass; . . . The Holy See was not to be permitted to intervene by diplomatic action in regard to peace or questions arising from the war."—*The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 17, pages 632, 633.

There was a secret agreement of the Entente Allies to ignore or forget the Roman Catholic Hierarchy as a temporal power, and specifically the head thereof. A publication issued at Washington, D. C., in March 1929, known as *The Protestant*, Volume 9, Number one, page one, paragraphs three and four, says: "Throughout the World War diocesan periodicals of the Hierarchy in this country [the United States] urged the papal ambition to sit in judgment on the belligerents as arbiter of peace. It was Italy that defeated that aspiration. In the pact of London [Treaty of 1915 above mentioned] that country executed a covenant barring the pope from any part in the conduct of hostilities or the terms of peace. Italy had excluded the papacy from both peace conferences at The Hague. But the Concordat [of 1929] removes that obstacle. Instead of the resolute adversary of the Roman See, Italy becomes its foremost confederate."

the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, which would be counted as ended at approximately the same time as the desolation upon the remnant of New Jerusalem came to an end, which was about the end of 1918 or beginning of 1919. It would therefore not be at all necessary to measure back from November 24, 1918, to November 24, 1848, in order to locate the time of the fulfillment of this part of the prophecy. It suffices, then, that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy was forgotten and neglected "*in that day*", that is to say, Jehovah's day, which began in 1914; and which period of forgetting ended in 1919; and that the forgetting was by her former political associates who had committed fornication with her, classing her as a temporal power. If the physical facts show that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy was forgotten or neglected by the political powers from 1914 to 1919, that would be a further corroboration of the conclusion that the fulfillment of the symbolic or prophetic seventy-year period is as hereinbefore stated, to wit, from A.D. 1914 to 1919.

"FORGOTTEN"

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy tried to seat herself in a prominent temporal position during the World War, but failed. During that time the pope was generally under suspicion, by the Allies in particular, and that with good reason. Although the pope tried to screen himself by claims of being neutral and maintaining strict neutrality during the World War, his claims naturally were not considered sincere. Note the

following historical fact: "London Treaty of (1915). A secret agreement concluded between Italy, France, Great Britain and Russia on 26 April and finally signed on 9 May 1915, declaring the terms under which Italy agreed to enter the war on the side of the Entente Allies. 'By the future treaty of peace' Italy was to receive the Trentino, the whole of Southern Tyrol, as far as its natural and geographical frontier, the Brenner Pass; . . . The Holy See was not to be permitted to intervene by diplomatic action in regard to peace or questions arising from the war."—*The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 17, pages 632, 633.

There was a secret agreement of the Entente Allies to ignore or forget the Roman Catholic Hierarchy as a temporal power, and specifically the head thereof. A publication issued at Washington, D. C., in March 1929, known as *The Protestant*, Volume 9, Number one, page one, paragraphs three and four, says: "Throughout the World War diocesan periodicals of the Hierarchy in this country [the United States] urged the papal ambition to sit in judgment on the belligerents as arbiter of peace. It was Italy that defeated that aspiration. In the pact of London [Treaty of 1915 above mentioned] that country executed a covenant barring the pope from any part in the conduct of hostilities or the terms of peace. Italy had excluded the papacy from both peace conferences at The Hague. But the Concordat [of 1929] removes that obstacle. Instead of the resolute adversary of the Roman See, Italy becomes its foremost confederate."

This proves that the pope tried to have illicit relationship with the political powers of the nations during the World War period but was pushed to the side and "forgotten" during that period, that is, between 1914 and 1919; and this corresponds exactly with the time spiritual Israel was under restraint by Satan's organization. The old whore's charms did not allure the greedy nations just at the time of the war, because they wanted all the prospective pie. These facts exactly fulfill the prophecy concerning the 'forgotten harlot'. The old woman was hanging down her head and wearing long, black clothes during that time. But, behold, she woke up at the end of that period, as the prophecy foretold she would do.

Says the prophecy (verse 15): "According to the days of one king." In the type the "one king" was the Babylonish line of kings, from Nebuchadnezzar to Belshazzar, of the land of the Chaldeans. But in the antitype or fulfillment of the prophecy "in that day", from 1914 forward, Christ Jesus, the enthroned King of Jehovah, began and has continued his reign. "Like the days of one king" (*Leeser*); "according to the days of a certain king." (*Rotherham*) These two latter translations help to clarify the matter and manifestly refer to the "King of the Chaldeans" and the antitypical desolation-period fulfilled from 1914 to 1918 as above stated. The World War closed November 11, 1918, and it was shortly after that time that the tight position of the pope began to be lifted and the "forgotten" period began to end.

When the peace conference began to be discussed the pope immediately got busy and tried to get a seat at that conference. On November 30, 1918, the New York *Evening World* published a statement to the effect that "the pope [then Benedict XV] desired to attend the peace conference in order that he might gain some temporal power". The publication stated that the Vatican sought to establish a private telegraph office and lines at the Vatican, "with private wires to all governments, so as not to have to use the Italian lines." (See *The Watchtower*, January 1, 1919.) The Italian government up to that time had kept the 'old lady' in the background. The peace conference opened on January 18, 1919, at which conference the League of Nations compact was presented, and later adopted, and at that conference the pope made efforts to gain a seat on a par with the political governments or nations, but failed. All these facts show that in that period of time above mentioned the old "harlot" was forgotten.

The events above mentioned were approximately seventy years after November 24, 1818, at which latter date the pope, in disguise, fled from Rome. On February 8, 1849, the Italian government divested the pope of all temporal power. But these facts appear to be merely incidental to the prophecy, and not in fulfillment thereof. These facts would help to conceal the true meaning of the prophecy for a time and until God's due time for it to be understood.

The prophecy further says: "After . . . seventy years [of desolation typical and antitypi-

"What is this? Other translations call it "the prophecy in this song." What is said is that Tyre as in the past was a great power, shall it befall her in the future? "It shall befall her in the end of the harlot" (Rothstein). Note that the word "Tyre" is used here as the song of Tyre. The "song of Tyre" is "that shall happen to Tyre in the end of the world" (Luther). Note that the word "Tyre" is used here as the reason for the name of the prophet, but "the song of Tyre" is used here as the reason for the name of the prophetess to be the reason for the name of the prophet. In this text puts verse sixteen in verse fifteen, and this verse sixteen is written in verse fifteen. This "Song of the Harlot" must therefore be a prophecy of the Lord concerning the Roman Catholic system, that is, the Roman Catholic hierarchy, allies and supporters and which foretells her coming judgment following the end of the period of her rule as Harlot. The Roman Catholic church gives scope for other harlots, to attract them to herself. The age begins to revive her pride and pretense and her efforts to gain her昔日的榮耀, to wit, to rule the nations of the earth as the vicegerent of Christ and in a diabolical way.

The words of "the song of the harlot" are addressed to the harlot herself, that is to say, to the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and at the period after the end of the World War in 1918, and which is after the enemy Satan and his wicked crowd of angels had been cast out of heaven and down to the earth and when Satan began to gather his forces, visible and invisible, to Armageddon. (Revelation 12: 7-9; 16: 13-16)

In this action or work Satan brings forward and puts into action his religious institution, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. This also marks the time when the Lord builds up Zion and sends forth 'the remnant of the seed of his woman' as his witnesses to proclaim his name and kingdom throughout the earth. (Revelation 12:17) The words of "the song of the harlot" are these: "Take an harp, go about the city, thou harlot that hast been forgotten: make sweet melody, sing many songs, that thou mayest be remembered." (Isaiah 23:16) This song is not sung to magnify the name of Jehovah, but for the contrary purpose. "And the harp and the viol, the tabret and pipe, and wine, are in their feasts; but they regard not the work of the Lord, neither consider the operation of his hands."— Isaiah 5:12.

The harlot is a "street-walker", and she decks herself in her best wearing apparel, paints her face, and sallies forth to accomplish her business of enticing and seducing others. She resorts to "an harp", that is, instruments to make a pleasing sound to the ear of her prospective paramours, including those she once had, and also new suckers, such as the United States and the professional politicians who run it. She adds whatsoever she can to her attractive charms and carries on her seductive work, and in doing this she stages a hypnotizing background of entrancing sound.

The "harp", as used in the prophecy, pictures the equipment or instrumentality of the old harlot by which she would add power and influence

to her religious squawks or doctrinal lies in order that she might inveigle others into her trap and gain control over them. Those instruments antitypically are such as the Jesuits, Fascists, Nazis, "Holy Year" fiasco, Holy Name Society, Catholic Action, Knights of Columbus, anti-communist schools, the Catholic press, the National Catholic Welfare Conference, the Legion of Decency, controlling moving pictures and moving-picture censorship, feigned and hypocritical patriotism exhibited in compulsory flag-saluting, the building of monuments and images at the expense of religionists, and all suchlike movements, by and through which she "struts her stuff" and bamboozles and hoodwinks the credulous population, hoping thereby to further her cause and gain her great objective, to wit, to rule the nations of the earth by dictators. Since the World War the old harlot has daily increased her boastful, scornful attitude and arrogance in parading herself before the peoples of the earth.

The harlot, that is, the Roman Catholic organization, goes up and down the earth with her instruments of sound under the leadership of the Devil and in opposition to the faithful followers of Christ Jesus, who are now singing the praises of Jehovah and his King. The harlot puts forth her best endeavors to crush everything that makes known the truth as God has put it in his Word. In striking contrast to the conduct of the harlot Jehovah pictures his faithful witnesses with the Lord in this beautiful symbolic phrase: "And I saw as it were a

of glass mingled with fire; and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God. And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints."—Revelation 15:2, 3.

The song of praise to the Most High announces that his kingdom is the only hope of the world and that Christ will now reign in righteousness and will destroy all hypocrisy and wickedness; and this song greatly disturbs the old "whore", and she whangs her harp with all her power and energy and uses all her power and influence to get the harpers of the Lord out of the way. The songs by the harlot announce that the Roman Catholic system is the hope of the world; and while she sings, such fanatics as Mussolini and Hitler applaud and lend their support. Her persecution of Jehovah's witnesses in every country is conclusive proof of this statement. The facts well known, and which are coming to pass in this day, exactly fit the prophecy, and this shows that now is the time, from and after the end of the World War, that the old "whore" is employing all her "harlot charms" to draw the nations and the people under her control, that she may rule to the satisfaction of her selfish and wicked ambition. She works with Mussolini and his like to accomplish her purpose.

ecy to a young man getting his eyeteeth c. Often a young man who is simple yields to the seductive influence of an enticing harlot who sings songs and exhibits herself in public place. The United States appears to be in the class of such simpletons.

Jehovah God, foreknowing the present-day conditions and the activities of the harlot religious organization, caused an appropriate proverb to be recorded long ago, and which now is applicable, to wit: "For at the window of my house I looked through my casement, and beheld among the simple ones, I discerned among the youths a young man void of understanding [United States], passing through the street near her corner; and he went the way to her house, in the twilight, in the evening, in the black and dark night; and, behold, there met him a woman with the attire of an harlot, and subtle of heart. (She is loud and stubborn; her feet abide not in her house; now is she without, now in the streets, and lieth in wait at every corner.) So she caught him, and kissed him, and with an impudent face said unto him, I have peace offerings with me; this day have I paid my vows: therefore came I forth to meet thee, diligently to seek thy face; and I have found thee. I have decked my bed with coverings of tapestry, with carved works, with fine linen of Egypt. I have perfumed my bed with myrrh, aloes, and cinnamon. Come, let us take our fill of love until the morning; let us solace ourselves with loves: for the goodman is not at home, he is gone a long journey; he hath taken a bag of money with

him, and will come home at the day appointed. With her much fair speech she caused him to yield, with the flattering of her lips she forced him. He goeth after her straightway, as an ox goeth to the slaughter or as a fool to the correction of the stocks; till a dart strike through his liver, as a bird hasteth to the snare, and knoweth not that it is for his life."—Proverbs 7:6-23.

Will the United States yield to the harlot's blandishments and fall? It so appears. The old "harlot" has her instruments everywhere in the land working overtime to get control of the United States and every branch of the government, and the politicians are falling to her enticements, and many of the people who are dupes and easily deceived are likewise yielding. Fascists and Nazis are one and the same crowd and are instruments employed with great effect by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to gain control of the nations. Each day the strength of that organization grows in the United States. The people in general appear to be asleep to the danger. The harlot even controls the moving-picture business in order to keep the people's thoughts on everything except the danger that besets the nation. An agent of the Vatican is the moving-picture dictatorial censor, and he approves pictures which magnify the Catholic system, loose conduct of the sexes and many other crimes. It is indeed a frightful time. It is the nighttime, and the people slumber. Darkness covers the land, and gross darkness is upon the people. (Isaiah 60:2) The harlot organization

and her instruments are busy during all hours of this dark "night".

The old "harlot", according to the prophecy, sings; as it is written: "Make sweet melody, sing many songs, that thou mayest be remembered." This she does in order to add to her charms and her power. Her endeavor is to induce the political crowd to believe not only that she is their spiritual guide, but that she should exercise temporal power and supremacy over all the political organizations. Inducing the politicians to yield to her blandishments, she will do business with them and through them and thereby gain control of the people and rule as a counterfeit Christ over the nation and ultimately over all the nations of "Christendom".

The aggressive campaign of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy of the present time is called by that organization "Catholic Action" and shows beyond all doubt that the present is considered the time for the old "harlot" to gain temporal control of the nations of the earth. She therefore squawks her songs, which songs are lies, of course, because that is her stock in trade, as God foretold. Now she boastfully says, as the prophet foretold: "'We have made it our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves"; nothing can "prevail against us" (Isaiah 28:15) With glaring, brazen hypocrisy he calls attention to her supposed attractiveness and desirability.

Hiding the real facts from others, she poses as the rightful censor of the truth. She tells the Federal Communications Commission, etc.

the owners and operators of radio stations, what they shall and shall not broadcast. She tells the people what they shall and shall not hear or read. She dictates to legislative bodies, to the judges of the courts, and to the other political officials of the land. She takes the lead in compulsory saluting of flags, contrary to the fundamental law of the nation, and directly in violation of God's law. (Exodus 20: 2-5) She poses as very patriotic and insists on the school teachers' taking an oath, which never before was thought of in America, and she bluffs the legislative and judicial powers to compel them to sustain her. Claiming to be patriotic, she is a traitor to every country under the sun. She takes oaths of allegiance to governments, with a mental reservation that it is all right to quickly violate them. She poses as the guardian of the people to insure a clean social condition, and underneath and behind the scenes carries on all manner of uncleanness.

Amongst her instruments that she uses are ultraselfish men called "Jews", who look only for personal gain, and who therefore readily yield to and join with the Hierarchy in any unrighteous schemes. The Catholic organization in fact controls the moving-picture business, and on every possible occasion in the exhibition of pictures attempts to magnify the "merits" of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. She raises a great hue and cry about Communists' being a danger, and this she does in order to attract the people's attention away from her own crookedness and to enable her to take advantage of

the people and slip her own instruments into positions of power. Her instruments and her songs seem to be endless, and therefore, in fulfillment of the prophecy, she sings "many songs", and the political dupes with gaping mouths are led right into her snare. The prophecy is now being rapidly fulfilled.

And what is the real purpose of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy action? Says the prophet: "That thou mayest be remembered"; that is, that she might get back her position of temporal power. Her great ambition is temporal power and rule of the nations of the world, and therefore she must be remembered by her political paramours. Religion, which she wrongfully claims is "Christianity", is used by her to gain political power. She is determined now to have to do with the treaties and make treaties with the nations and to bring all religious practices under her control and to suppress everyone who does not declare that she is the representative of God on earth. She is determined to suppress everyone who dares declare the truth of God's Word.

Jehovah's witnesses are commissioned to speak the truth, and therefore Jehovah's witnesses constitute a stinging thorn in the flesh of the old "harlot" because they lift high the banner of the Lord, pointing the people to the declaration of Jehovah that his kingdom and his King are the hope of the world and that there is none other. The kingdom of God and Christ, as proclaimed by Jehovah's witnesses, is the only thing the Roman Catholic Hierarchy

now really fear. The old "harlot" is now very diligent to hide from the people her long and bloody record as inquisitionist and the many crimes she has committed, and when her activity and filthy record, as recorded in history, are mentioned and the truth of God's Word is told about her, she howls and with great crocodile tears says: "That speech is shocking to our religious susceptibilities." The facts conclusively prove the fulfillment of the prophecy.

"ABOMINATION"

The "desolation of desolation", spoken of by Daniel the prophet, and by the Lord Jesus, is that which claims to rule in the place and stead of God's kingdom under Christ Jesus. (Daniel 11:31; 12:11; Matthew 24:15) The League of Nations was set up for that very purpose, claiming the right and power to rule the world. But have in mind what constitutes and controls the League of Nations. At the very beginning of the organization of the League of Nations the Roman Catholic Hierarchy sought a place or seat in that conference, and also there began to put on hot show to get into it and to dominate the League. When that "beast came up out of the pit" (Revelation 17, 8) immediately following the end of the World War, the old "harlot" climbed on the back of that "beast" and has been riding arrogantly since (Revelation 17:3, 5), and exercising the guiding control of the League of Nations, claiming the right to rule and vigorously attempting to rule the world in the place and stead of Christ Jesus.

with the political, commercial and gangster powers of the world; and which proves that the organization is God's enemy. By the use of fraud and deceit the Roman Catholic religious organization leads the people into Satan's trap, thus proving that such religious organization is man's worst visible enemy. Jesus emphatically declared that no man or organization can serve two masters. He cannot serve God and the Devil.—Matthew 6: 24.

The doctrines of the Roman Catholic "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction" and the practices in which that organization indulges show that she is the chief servant of the Devil and the arch enemy of God. The unchangeable rule of God is announced in these words: "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?" (Romans 6: 16) From all the evidence the conclusion is irresistible that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization serves the Devil and is therefore the enemy of God, the enemy of man, and the very personification of unrighteousness.

'VISITS TYRE'

The prophecy then declares that Jehovah visits Tyre, and surely that visit is not in *his* favor, but for judgment against that wicked organization. When does the Lord visit her? The prophecy answers: "And it shall come to pass, after the end of seventy years, that the Lord will visit Tyre, and she shall turn to *her*

hire, and shall commit fornication with all the kingdoms of the world upon the face of the earth." (Isaiah 23: 17) Other translations of this text are: "And it shall come to pass after the end of seventy years, that Jehovah will visit Tyre." (A.R.V.) "So shall it be at the end of seventy years that Jehovah will visit Tyre." (Rotherham) "And it shall come to pass after seventy years, that the Lord will visit Tyre." —*Douay.*

This shows that it is from and after 1918 that Jehovah visits Tyre, and during the time in which the Lord is restoring his remnant from Babylon and using them for his purpose. As Jehovah permits the Devil to remain, so for a time he permits the old "harlot", the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization, to remain in existence for a time and to operate against his kingdom and his witnesses. First Jehovah visits her with the proclamation of the truth against her, and, in doing this, he commands his witnesses to "arise . . . up against her in battle". (Obadiah 1) This is Jehovah's "strange work": and, this strange work being completed, he visits her and executes judgment upon her, and that marks the beginning of his "etrange etat", which is the second part of his visit. (Isaiah 28: 21) During the first part of his visit, as in case of his visit to Sodom, Jehovah gathers the evidence against her as to her activities as a harlot operating with a harp and song. During the first part of the visit, says the prophet, "she shall turn [(R.V.) shall return; (Roth.) will return] to her hire." She returns to her hire as

gains her dominating position in this combine when she 'returns to her hire' or traffic and 'plays the harlot with all the kingdoms of the world upon the face of the earth'. This is further proof that the combine is "the abomination that maketh desolate". Corroborating this conclusion, note Revelation 17:1, 2: "And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters [as ancient Tyre did]: with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication [which the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has done since 1918, while rejecting the kingdom of God, the 'Stone laid in Zion'], and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication."

During the past few years the Fascists and Nazis have grown at a tremendous speed, thus showing that the inhabitants of the earth are made drunk with the Roman Catholic Hierarchy's lying, poisonous doctrines, her "wine"; and the fornication and drunkenness continue to increase: "For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies."—Revelation 18:3.

The combine of the nations, under the influence of organized religion, was lined up behind the Hague International Arbitration Court, which went out of sight during the World War but

America the truth of God's kingdom has had its greatest proclamation and witness, and that is exactly what the Roman Catholic Hierarchy hates. It is the truth of and concerning the kingdom of God when proclaimed that "shocks the religious susceptibilities" of the Hierarchy crowd, because they hate that which lets God's light shine and which exposes them. For that reason the Hierarchy attempts to suppress the use of the radio and all other means of publication of God's kingdom message.

The prophecy of the Lord shows that modern Tyre, the Catholic organization, commits fornication with all the nations and gains her desire. When the Hierarchy has gained complete temporal power of the earth, that will in her mind fully establish the conclusion that her desire has been fully accomplished, and then she will say "Peace and safety" (1 Thessalonians 5:3); and then the "ten horns", that is, all the ruling powers of the nations, "receive power . . . with the beast," the League of Nations combine being in fact a league of Fascism or combined Fascist governments, dominated by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. "And the woman [Devil's visible religious organization, the harlot] which thou sawest is that great city [the Hierarchy organization], which reigneth over [combined Fascism,] the kings of the earth." — Revelation 17:12, 18.

What was the real inducement that caused King Edward VIII to abdicate may be better understood in the near future. That Fascism now is gaining at an alarming rate in Britain,

there is not the slightest doubt. Also the Fascists and Nazis are rapidly increasing in the United States. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy is confident of putting to silence through its instruments everything and every activity that exposes the crookedness of the Hierarchy and makes known Jehovah God's purpose. It is nighttime, so far as most of the people are concerned; and the old "whore", while the people slumber, moves forward with greater confidence. A complete fulfillment of the prophecy draws nigh. God caused the apostle Paul to write authoritatively concerning this very time, to wit: "But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape." —1 Thessalonians 5:1-3.

Jehovah is now carrying on his "strange work", which serves to enlighten the people of good will and to show them the only way of escape; and only those who find that way will escape. The old "whore" sitting upon the back of the beast may soon be expected to say: "Peace and safety; we have silenced all opponents." Then Jehovah's "strange act" will begin, and sudden destruction comes upon her "as travail upon a woman with child". There begins the bowl, described by Isaiah 23:1-14, and the end will be the destruction of Satan's religious system, by which he has hoodwinked the people.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy with an air of superiority, and with great claim of power and authority from God, have approached the kings of the earth and said to them in effect: "We bestow upon you the divine right to rule, we give you holy sanctions and heavenly blessings; and by reason thereof your positions as political rulers are sacred and are ordained of God, and therefore, so far as the people are concerned, you are viewed as constituting the 'higher powers'; and we who compose the Hierarchy are the spiritual 'higher powers' and superior to all other earthly power." (Romans 13:1) The true "Higher Powers" are Jehovah and Christ Jesus. The claim that earthly organizations are "the higher powers" is therefore false. In this fraudulent representation and claim made by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the harlot proceeds to gain control over millions of gullible men. Such constitutes the "merchandise" and "hire" of the harlot by which she draws men into her clutches. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has fraudulently posed as the representative of God with full divine authority to bestow blessings on kings, while in truth and in fact she is the representative of the Devil. The Hierarchy uses 'the hire of the harlot' to induce the political powers to believe that she should dictate the policy of the world, and thus carry out her purpose to set up a dictatorial rule of the earth.

But now the time arrives when Jehovah turns the tables on the old wench. Jehovah does not bring the 'merchandise and hire of the harlot'

into his temple, but by carrying on and doing his "strange work" Jehovah exposes the wickedness of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the religionists; and thus he counteracts the effects of her merchandise and hire and causes the same to work against the religionists, and the result is beneficial to those who love righteousness and hate iniquity. This Jehovah does by causing the people to have their eyes opened to the truth and to clearly see that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the leader of religionists, is a part of Satan's organization; and those people of good will, who thus see and identify the Roman Catholic organization as a part of Satan's organization, separate themselves from that wicked organization and hasten to Jehovah's city of refuge, the place of holiness. (Numbers 33: 11-32) Therefore when "her merchandise and her hire" are fully exposed and revealed by the truth, these truths turn those of good will to "holiness to the Lord".

Jehovah's witnesses have a part in this "strange work", in this, that as his commissioned servants they carry God's message of warning to the people of "Christendom", and which message of truth is the true guide to all the people in or outside of "Christendom" who desire to take the right course. When the people of good will see and understand the truth, then the false doctrines which they have been taught by the Hierarchy work against the organization of Satan and to the glory of Jehovah, the Holy One, and thus become "holiness to the Lord".

Says the prophet: "It shall not be treasured nor laid up." Her merchandise and lying shall not be brought into the temple of Jehovah, but it shall be used against and operate against the harlot. As to the "merchandise" and "hire" of a material kind, that is, all the material wealth of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, that, to be sure, shall be left behind by the old harlot when, at the beginning of Armageddon, the religious system shall be destroyed. It all in truth belongs to the Lord, because the earth and the fullness thereof are his. (Psalm 24:1) At all times such material things have belonged to the Lord, but have been misused and abused by the religionists. Those who survive Armageddon will find better use for such, because they will use material things to the glory of God in his service. "For her merchandise shall be for them that dwell before the Lord." The word "dwell" as here used in the prophecy means 'to abide and remain as a remnant'. (Isaiah 7:3, margin; Psalms 27:4; 61:6,7) The promise of Jehovah is that those persons of good will who 'seek righteousness and meekness' may be "hid" during Armageddon and dwell thereafter on the earth. It is such that the Lord Jesus leads unto the fountain of life, feeding them and fulfilling their desires, and those are the ones that praise Jehovah day and night. (Revelation 7:9-17) They abide in his organization and under his protection.

During the World War, when spiritual Jerusalem, that is, God's faithful remnant people on the earth, seemingly had come to the end

(Revelation 7:17) The revelation of Jehovah's prophecy stripping bare the religious frauds and disclosing Jehovah's judgment against such fraudulent merchandise becomes spiritual "meat in due season" for those who love Jehovah. Prophecy in fulfillment and being understood proves to be their spiritual nourishing food and is profitable to those who love God. When the people of good will see these things, then no longer is the old "harlot" and her allies, by the use of her "merchandise" and lying, able to keep those who love and serve Jehovah from eating and filling sufficiently, and they do eat sufficiently of God's spiritual food and are greatly satisfied and rejoice.

Further the prophecy says: "And for durable clothing," "stately clothing" (R.V., margin). Clothing symbolically stands for identification. -When those persons of good will hear and act upon the truth, seeing that the "hire" and "merchandise" of the old "harlot" is a fraud and snare, they immediately wash up, that is, they "wash their robes and make them white in the blood of the Lamb". (Revelation 7:14) They are clothed with stately "white robes" and thus identify themselves as servants of Jehovah God. They get on the Lord's side and no longer have anything to do with the harlot organization. Their devotion, service and praise is to Jehovah and his King, who sits upon the throne and who shall for ever rule the world in righteousness. The faithful "great multitude" then have a "stately" appearance.

among the nations in matters pertaining to war and peace, but was cast to the side and forgotten. At the close of the World War, in fulfillment of the prophecy, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy began her activities to regain temporal power, and, as the once forgotten harlot, she goes about the nations singing the song of the harlot, that is, using seductive means to induce the political rulers of the nations to recognize her and to restore her to her former position as a temporal power.

Fascism and Nazism mean one and the same thing and are the instrument of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the child of the Devil, to gain control of the earth by the Hierarchy and turn all people against God and his kingdom. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy classes everyone that is opposed to her as "red" or "communist", and this is done to incite the people against those who stand for whatsoever is right. The Hierarchy is particularly opposed to and persecutes Jehovah's witnesses because they proclaim the truth of God's name and kingdom and point to God's kingdom as the only hope of the world.—Matthew 12:18-21, A.R.V.

The prophecy seems clearly to indicate that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, operating its organization of Fascism, together with other religious allies, will gain control of the leading nations of the earth, including Britain and the United States, and then that hypocritical religious organization will cry out, as prophetically written, "Peace and safety." This part of the prophecy is set forth in Isaiah 23:15-18.

for him and his King by now joyfully obeying the commandments of the Most High. "Arise ye, and let us rise up against her in battle." —Obadiah 1.

"MAN OF SIN"

Jehovah, in his Word, describes his ideal man that is pleasing to him. (Psalms 1, 8, 16, 111, and 113) He designates the ideal man as "my servant", "mine elect." (Isaiah 42:1-6, 19, 20) That ideal man or elect servant is Christ Jesus and the members of his official house, his church; and although composed of many members, they are all one and are designated "a perfect man". (Ephesians 4:13; 1 Corinthians 10:17; John 17:21) Exactly opposite to that ideal man, and opposing God's elect servant, is an enemy designated in the Scriptures as the old "harlot" and as "the man of sin", "the son of perdition," (2 Thessalonians 2:1-3, R.V.) and which also is a composite body made up of many persons who indulge in a work of opposition to God's kingdom and in persecuting all those who faithfully serve God. That "man of sin" is the servant of the Devil, the enemy of God and the enemy of man.

Some in that composite body were once in line for the kingdom of God, having entered into the covenant to do the will of God, following in the footsteps of Jesus. Such by reason of becoming unfaithful have fallen away from God and Christ, and these are designated as "the evil servant" and may well be classed as the head or chief ones of the "man of sin",

We outwardly "good words and fair speech to deceive the hearts of the simple." (Romans 16:18) Judas Iscariot, who undertook to follow Jesus Christ and then betrayed him, was an example or type of such enemies, and of him Jesus said that he was lost and that He had lost none except the son of perdition. (John 17:12) Judas, therefore, foreshadowed the "evil servant" company, "the man of sin," "the son of perdition." Such composite company is spoken of in the Scriptures in these words. (2 Thessalonians 2:9): "Whose coming is after [that is, according to] the working of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders," and who "bring forward Satan's schemes to oppose God's kingdom. The "evil servant" class and "man of sin," "the son of perdition," are "not in one and the same company, although a somewhat different course is joined together in opposition to God.

• **WES ASKED**

ther to more readily comprehend
enemies of God are here briefly
named. the Devil, "the god of
this world ruler of men; Gog,
Satan in command of the
visible and invisible; all
who have rebelled against
such enemies are invisible
to man's eyes.

* of God, that is, those who
are the enemies of man,

use outwardly 'good words and fair speech to deceive the hearts of the simple'. (Romans 16:18) Judas Iscariot, who undertook to follow Jesus Christ and then betrayed him, was an ensample or type of such enemies, and of him Jesus said that he was lost and that He had lost none except the son of perdition. (John 17:12) Judas, therefore, foreshadowed the "evil servant" company, "the man of sin," "the son of perdition." Such composite company is spoken of in the Scriptures in these words (2 Thessalonians 2:9): "Whose coming is after [that is, according to] the working of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders," and who carry forward Satan's schemes to oppose God and his kingdom. The "evil servant" class and the "man of sin", "the son of perdition," are at the end in one and the same company, although pursuing a somewhat different course until they are joined together in opposition to the kingdom of God.

ENEMIES ASSEMBLED

To aid the reader to more readily comprehend, the specific enemies of God are here briefly named, to wit: Satan, the Devil, "the god of this world," the invisible ruler of man; Gog, the chief officer of Satan in command of the Devil's organization visible and invisible; all the wicked angels, who have rebelled against Jehovah God. All of such enemies are invisible to the natural or human eyes.

The visible enemies of God, that is, those on earth and who also are the enemies of men,

CHAPTER VII

FATE

"Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies: thy right hand shall find out those that hate thee. Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven in the time of thine anger: the Lord shall swallow them up in his wrath, and the fire shall devour them." — Psalm 21: 8, 9.

Men are often deceived, and many of them become deceivers. Concerning "the last days", which is a time of great peril, it is written: "But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived." (2 Timothy 3: 13) All the evidence shows that the present is a time of greatest deception ever practiced upon the people. No man can deceive God at all. God knows even the secret thoughts of man. At all times he knows who are his enemies, and in his due time he will search them out and duly recompense them for all their wickedness. By what means will he do so? and who will act for Jehovah in dealing with his enemies?

Jesus was born in the month of October; and that is generally understood to mark the beginning of the year 1 A.D. At the time of his birth a company of shepherds were guarding their flocks near the town of Bethlehem, when they heard the voice of angels from heaven proclaiming this glad news: 'Glory to God in the highest, earth peace toward men of good will.' (Luke 2: 14, Rotherham) That meant that the great

CHAPTER VII

FATE

"Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies: thy right hand shall find out those that hate thee. Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven in the time of thine anger: the Lord shall swallow them up in his wrath, and the fire shall devour them." — Psalm 21: 8, 9.

Men are often deceived, and many of them become deceivers. Concerning "the last days", which is a time of great peril, it is written: "But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived." (2 Timothy 3: 13) All the evidence shows that the present is a time of greatest deception ever practiced upon the people. No man can deceive God at all. God knows even the secret thoughts of man. At all times he knows who are his enemies, and in his due time he will search them out and duly recompense them for all their wickedness. By what means will he do so? and who will act for Jehovah in dealing with his enemies?

Jesus was born in the month of October; and that is generally understood to mark the beginning of the year 1 A.D. At the time of his birth a company of shepherds were guarding their flocks near the town of Bethlehem, when they heard the voice of angels from heaven proclaiming this glad news: 'Glory to God in the highest, on earth peace toward men of good will.' (Luke 2: 14, Rotherham) That meant that the great

world as King, but it was not then God's due time for that reign to begin. God's purpose was to permit the enemy Satan to have full time and opportunity to carry out his boastful challenge, and therefore He said to Jesus: "The Loap said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool."

—Psalm 110:1.

For more than 1800 years Jesus must wait for his reign to begin, and within that period of time Jehovah, by and through Christ Jesus, has gathered out from the nations "a people for his name", which people God uses specifically to declare his name in the earth just preceding the overthrow of his enemies.—Acts 15:14.

END OF THE WORLD

"The world" means the peoples of earth, organized into nations and under the supervision of an invisible overlord, and which overlord for centuries has been Satan the Devil, who, together with a host of wicked angels, has influenced, controlled and ruled the world without interruption. "The end of the world," therefore, means the beginning of the period of time when the rule of Satan must be interrupted preparatory to his overthrow. The coming of the Lord Jesus, the rightful King, would necessarily interrupt Satan's rule of the world and would mark the time when there should be a final showdown between Satan and Jehovah God.

To Jesus his disciples propounded this question: "What shall be the [proof] of thy coming, and of the end of the world?" (Matthew 24:3)

Jesus immediately answered the question in these cryptic words: "For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows." (Matthew 24: 7, 8) The beginning of the interruption of Satan's rule, it is seen, therefore, would be a time of sorrow upon the wicked one and upon his allies and agents, visible and invisible, and sorrow to people under Satan's power. That prophecy of Jesus began to have fulfillment in the autumn season of 1914, which marks the beginning of the end of Satan's wicked world. For further proof that the end had come, marking the time when there should be a change, Jesus said: "Upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; . . . men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth." (Luke 21: 25, 26) Everyone observes that such conditions have obtained, particularly since the World War began, in 1914; and since 1918 the woes and troubles upon peoples and nations have increased.

The Scriptures give further and corroborative evidence of Christ's coming and the end of the world, which evidence is recorded in these words: "Thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned. And the nations were angry." (Revelation 11: 17, 18) That also marks the date 1914, as shown by the indisputable facts. Up to that time Satan had the privilege of appearing in heaven. (Job 2: 1) When Jesus was enthroned, the conflict immediately began

between Christ Jesus and the Devil, that old Serpent and Dragon. That war in heaven marks specifically the beginning of the end of the world, and concerning which it is written: "And there was war in heaven; Michael [who is Christ Jesus] and his angels fought against the dragon [that is, the Devil]; and the dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven. Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ; for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night." (Revelation 12: 7-10) Thus the Devil and the wicked angels were excluded from heaven and cast down to the earth. Both the chronology of the Bible and prophecy show that it was in 1914 the world ended, marking the time when Christ Jesus took power and began his reign, and his first work was to cast Satan and the wicked angels down to the earth.

TROUBLE INCREASES

The beginning of the World War marked the "beginning of sorrows" on the earth, as Jesus stated. The World War ended in 1918, but the troubles upon the nations have continued to increase since. In the first chapter herein a number of questions are propounded concern-

ing the great increase of sorrow and trouble in the earth, and now those questions shall be answered according to the Scriptures and in harmony with the Scriptures. The clergy have told the people that the increased woes upon the nations are due to the fact that the people have been unfaithful to their religious organizations and for that reason God has sent trouble upon them. That claim is entirely wrong and a defamation of God's holy name. The correct answer is set forth in the Bible in these words: "Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time."—Revelation 12: 12.

Being cast out of heaven and compelled to confine his operations to the earth, Satan knows that his time is very short until the final conflict which will determine the question of supremacy and his own existence. The purpose of Satan the Devil is to turn all men away from God and bring about their destruction. Therefore Satan the enemy brings greater woes and sorrows upon the peoples of earth and causes his agents, the religionists, to falsely charge Almighty God with the responsibility therefor, his purpose being to turn the people against God and cause them to curse God and die.

You will now readily call to mind that there has been a great increase of crime and woe and suffering since the end of the World War, all of which is due to the operations of God's enemy the Devil and his wicked allies. As fur-

ther corroborative proof, note it is written in the Scriptures, to wit: "This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof; from such turn away." (2 Timothy 3:1-5) Those who take the lead in the wickedness described in this scripture are the religionists, who are now carrying on their religious racket. This is further proof that these are the last days for Satan and his wicked agents and that soon the end thereof will come.

"THE TEMPLE OF GOD"

In connection with the Bible record of the war in heaven and the ousting of Satan, it is written: "And the temple of God was opened in heaven." (Revelation 11:19) What is meant by the term "the temple of God"? It does not mean a house or building erected by human hands, but means the composite body of faithful followers of Christ, the Head of God's organization. In proof of this statement note the scriptures addressed to the faithful followers of Jesus Christ: "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of

God is holy, which temple ye are."—1 Corinthians 3:16, 17.

Those who compose the temple of God are not religionists, but must be separate and distinct from every part of Satan's organization, showing full obedience to God's commandments: "And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty."—2 Corinthians 6:16-18.

The temple of God is the house of sons, of which Christ Jesus is the Head. It is the church of God; and concerning which it is written: "Ye are . . . the household of God; . . . In whom all the building, fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord; in whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the spirit." (Ephesians 2:19, 21, 22) The names of those who compose that temple company are not written in books on the earth, but are recorded in heaven: "[The] church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven."—Hebrews 12:23.

COMING TO THE TEMPLE

It is to the temple company, his faithful followers, that Jesus Christ says: "And if I

and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also." (John 14:3) God caused Solomon to build a temple at Jerusalem, which was a mere type of God's organization, his spiritual temple, of which Christ Jesus is Head. Solomon, who was a type of Christ Jesus, began to build that temple in the fourth year of his reign. (1 Kings 6:1) When Jesus was on earth it was in the fourth year of his ministry, or exactly three and one-half years after the beginning thereof, that he offered himself to Jerusalem as king. As shown by the foregoing evidence, it was in 1914 that Christ Jesus was enthroned by Jehovah as King (Psalm 2:6); and three and one-half years thereafter, that is, in the fourth year of his reign, Jesus Christ comes to the temple of Jehovah God; that is to say, he began to gather unto himself his faithful followers, first those who are dead being resurrected, and then those on earth were gathered. During the 1900 years of his waiting many of the faithful had died and must sleep in death until the coming of the Lord. Doubtless some of those faithful ones had been Catholics and some of them non-Catholics, but all of the temple company must be wholly devoted to God and to Christ. The faithful dead are first resurrected and gathered unto the Lord; and that marked the beginning of gathering the temple company.—1 Thessalonians 4:15-17.

The second coming of the Lord and the beginning of his reign must precede by three and one-half years his coming to the temple and

gathering unto himself his faithful ones. "Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, . . . Let no man deceive you by any means; for that day shall not come except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition."—² Thessalonians 2:1, 3.

Those on the earth and alive at the coming of the Lord, and who were found faithful, are gathered unto him, and form or make up the temple class. Before the coming of the Lord Jesus there must be, as the Scriptures point out, a preparatory work done concerning Christ's second coming. The facts show that for forty years prior to 1918 the Lord caused his faithful followers to proclaim throughout the earth the second coming of the Lord, to the end that those who are faithfully devoted to him might be prepared to receive the Lord. That was work under Christ Jesus preparing for the coming to the temple. Concerning this matter Jehovah caused to be written: "Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me; and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in; behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts."—Malachi 3:1.

The matter of the coming of the Lord to his temple is considered more in detail in *Vindication*, Book Three, beginning with page 101. The proof shows that the time of his coming was in 1918 and that he has since been at the temple.

Those who deny this are against God and his kingdom, regardless of what they may claim.

PURPOSE OF HIS COMING

The primary purpose of the coming of the Lord Jesus is the vindication of Jehovah's name. The Scriptures show that at his coming there would be some who would remain faithful and true to God when put to the most severe test. Those who successfully withstand the test receive the Lord's approval. Have in mind now that Jehovah said to the Devil that He would first have his name declared throughout the earth and that then he would show forth his supreme power. (Exodus 9:16) The temple company constitutes 'the people of God taken out for his name'. (Acts 15:14) Such are the ones who must be witnesses for Jehovah.—Isaiah 43:10-12.

Those faithful ones on earth at the second coming, and who prove faithful unto God, are called "the remnant of her seed" (Revelation 12:17); meaning that they are the remaining faithful ones who are the children born of God's woman or organization, and which takes place at the temple judgment. At the time of the coming of the Lord to the temple there were many who had made a covenant to do God's will, all of whom must be put to the test by the Lord Jesus, to determine who are faithful and unselfishly devoted to God and his kingdom. That marked the beginning of judgment. Therefore concerning his coming to the temple, and the

fulfilled thereof, it is written: "After whom shall abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap; and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto me a gift and silver, that they may offer unto me an offering in righteousness."—Malachi 3: 2, 3.

All judgment has been committed to Christ Jesus, and now he sits as the great Judge to peoples and to greater judgment. (John 5: 22, 27) He tries all who have made a covenant to do His will, and those who receive his approbation offer unto God an offering in righteousness, which offering in righteousness is the un-edish devotion to God in the proclamation of his messenger of his kingdom, and sounding the praises of Jehovah. (Hebrews 13: 15) It is with those who have made a covenant with the Lord that judgment begins at the temple. "For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God; and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?" (1 Peter 4: 17) At that judgment the approved ones the Lord Jesus designates collectively as "a faithful and wise servant", and then adds: "Blessed is that servant whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods."—Matthew 24: 46, 47.

"His goods" here mentioned means his kingdom interests, that is to say, the proper pro-

lamation of the testimony concerning Christ and his kingdom. The faithful approved ones are made witnesses for the Lord and receive instruction from him at the temple (which is called the 'secret' or 'dark' place, hidden from the world), and such witnesses are then commanded to go forth and proclaim from the housetops, that is, publicly, what they have learned. (Matthew 10: 27) Because they faithfully obey the Lord's commandment in proclaiming the testimony, the old Dragon, the Devil, desperately attempts to destroy them; and concerning which it is written: "And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ."—Revelation 12: 17.

It is those of the temple company remaining on the earth, the people taken out from the world for the name of Jehovah, that are commanded by the Lord to go to the people and tell them of the kingdom, and to warn them of the destruction of Satan's organization that is coming upon the world and to inform them of the great blessings that shall come to the people after Satan's organization is destroyed. The Lord therefore gives this commandment: "And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come. For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be."—Matthew 24: 14, 21.

Jehovah's witnesses delight in obeying commandments, regardless of all opposition, part of Satan and his religious agents. Let's witness they have no alternate course obey. (Acts 3: 23) The Lord at this time is calling forth his witnesses to proclaim the glorious gospel of the kingdom, and they must do it as a witness to the nations as a warning, and this work must be done now.

EVIDENCE IDENTIFIED

While the witnesses of Jehovah are, due to God's commandment, proclaiming his name throughout the earth, the judgment of the nations, and particularly of the religious organizations, is in progress. One of the purposes of the 'preaching of this gospel as a witness to the nations' is to furnish the opportunity for the peoples of the nations to identify themselves and make known to others whether they are on the side of God or on that of the Devil. The judgment of the nations is now taking place, and concerning which it is written: "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory; and before him shall be gathered all nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats; and he shall set his sheep on his right hand, but the goats on his left." (Matthew 25: 31-33)

The animals, goats and sheep, are here used as symbols denoting the bad and the good. Goats are used as a symbol of those people who show an ugly, cruel and persecuting spirit in opposition to the kingdom of God and against God's witnesses. The persons of good will toward God and his kingdom are symbolized by "sheep". The division of the people into two general classes, that is, goats and sheep, is now in progress.

The "faithful servant" class, who, as Jehovah's witnesses, carry the message of the kingdom to the people, are counted by the Lord Jesus as a part of himself, because they are members of his official house or body. Whatsoever is done unto his faithful followers, whether that be good or bad, Jesus marks up as done unto himself. The facts and scriptures show that the Devil hates God's faithful witnesses and tries to destroy them. All those who join the Devil in the persecution of the faithful followers of Christ Jesus are of the Devil, and hence are placed by the Lord in the goat company.

Consider the facts now: Who are the ones in the earth that ill-treat, persecute and cause to be arrested and imprisoned the faithful witnesses of the Lord, who go about from house to house to exhibit to the people this gospel of the kingdom and to tell them about the kingdom? There is but one answer. It is the religionists, the leaders in the religious organizations, that cruelly persecute the faithful followers of Christ, and the ones that take the

Lead in that cruel persecution are those of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. They are the ones who urge the people to destroy books which explain the kingdom or kingdom message. It is those religionists, who are children and agents of the Devil and therefore enemies of the Lord, that are desperately trying to keep the people in ignorance of what is written in the Bible. They not only cause the arrest of these witnesses, but heap indignities and punishment upon them after they are thrown into prison. To that wicked, persecuting, goat class of religionists Jesus, the great Judge, says: "For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me."—Matthew 25:42-45.

The facts well known clearly identify the religionists, and particularly the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, as the "goats" who persecute Jehovah's witnesses, and this they do because Jehovah's witnesses are faithfully serving the Lord in obedience to his commandments. A few instances are here cited: In the state of New Jersey, where the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is exercising great political power over the

politicians and the courts, hundreds of Jehovah's witnesses have recently been arrested and thrown into prison for no reason whatsoever except the fact that they preach the truth of God's kingdom to the people. They are arrested on the ground that they are preaching the gospel without a police permit. It is worse than ridiculous to conclude that a policeman, an imperfect and unrighteous man, could grant a permit to do what the Almighty God has commanded shall be done; and for the same reason neither the police nor the courts have any right to prevent or even attempt to prevent what the Almighty God has commanded his witnesses now to do. Their conduct is 'fighting against God', and thus they identify themselves as God's enemies, who will receive due recompense.

In many of the other states like persecutions of the Lord's faithful followers are carried on by religionists, particularly by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. In Catholic Quebec many of the faithful followers of Christ Jesus are charged with the crime of sedition and are convicted upon the sole testimony that they are going about preaching the gospel of God's kingdom. In Germany, which is outwardly ruled by the fanatic Hitler, but which is secretly ruled by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and the Devil, thousands of faithful and true witnesses for the Lord are imprisoned, cruelly beaten and some of them foully murdered because they have in possession a Bible or books which explain the Bible. In Italy, which is outwardly ruled by the gangster Mussolini and secretly

dictated to by the Vatican, the true and faithful followers of Christ Jesus are cruelly persecuted. In Northern and Southern Rhodesia, in West Africa, and many islands of the sea, and, in fact, in all the lands of so-called "Christendom", the religionists, and particularly the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, carry on a wicked persecution of the faithful followers of Christ. By this means those persecutors identify themselves as "goats", that is, enemies of God and of Christ.



The Lord, the great Judge at the temple, takes note of this and divides the nations by placing the "goats" on his left hand, which means the place where they will receive a just punishment. And what will be the punishment of such wicked goats? Jesus announces his de-

cree, to wit: "Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. And these shall go away into everlasting [destruction]." (Matthew 25:41, 46) In the judgment which the Lord is now conducting at the temple he is 'finding out his enemies' and making them identify themselves and duly marking them for destruction.—Psalm 21:8, 9.

SHEEP

The faithful members of the body of Christ he designates as his "sheep", who are made members of his royal house. Then says Jesus: "And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd." (John 10:16) Those who compose this company designated as "other sheep" are also designated in the Scriptures as those persons of good will toward God, and as Jona-dabs (2 Kings 10:15-23), and who, continuing faithful, shall form the "great multitude" and receive life everlasting on the earth. In the judgment now in progress at the temple those "other sheep" identify themselves by the course they take, and these are the ones of whom the Lord says that he puts them on his right hand, that they may receive his favor.

When Jehovah's witnesses are in the country carrying the message of good will, and come in contact with them, they are gladly received. When Jehovah's witnesses do

what they can to relieve them of such suffering, and they do so because they love righteousness and hate iniquity and desire to be pleasing to God and to Christ Jesus; and thus they identify themselves. Therefore it is written concerning them: "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me." (Matthew 25:34-40) Those faithful "other sheep" receive the blessings of everlasting life.

PREPARING FOR ARMAGEDDON

While the Lord Jesus Christ at the temple is conducting judgment, and while his faithful followers and witnesses are carrying the message of the kingdom to the people, Satan is moving with all his power to assemble all the enemies of God preparatory for the final battle at Armageddon. The word "Armageddon" means the

place of assembly of troops, that is, where God's people are, and Satan gathers his forces together to destroy them. Knowing his time is short, Satan is hurrying his forces on for the conflict; and concerning this it is written: "And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon."—Revelation 16: 13, 14, 16.

The term "beast" here used symbolically stands for the governments of the nations of the earth, particularly of "Christendom", which are beastly and cruel. The "false prophet" is composed of those of the ruling element of the nations of "Christendom" which falsely prognosticate that the remedy for the present ills is found in the League of Nations or other like combinations of men and nations. They ignore and oppose God's kingdom and look to man for support and protection and blessings. The word "dragon" is one of the Devil's names, and he it is who is directing the enemy's forces. All are marching forward and taking their position ready for the great conflict.

THE EXECUTION

The climax comes at the battle of Armageddon. It is "the battle of that great day of God

"Almighty", and at that battle the disputed question of supremacy will be settled for ever. The Devil boastfully and egotistically expects to win. He is certain to lose. Jehovah has been waiting for this time, and he has let the Devil go on, and for that reason he addressed the Devil in these words: "But for this cause have I allowed thee to remain, in order to show thee my power." (Exodus 9:16, Leeser) The power of Jehovah God is unlimited. He is the Almighty God, his purpose shall be accomplished, and none can prevent it. The enemies of God having been identified, and the wickedness thereof disclosed, and the warning given, the time for execution is at hand. Those who believe that God's Word is true may expect to find in the Scriptures the correct and true statement as to the execution of God's enemies. It is even so.

The chief visible enemy of God, and therefore the greatest and worst public enemy, is the Roman Catholic religious organization. For centuries that organization scornfully and arrogantly has ridden upon the backs of the people and nations and robbed the people of their just earnings. The day of that wicked institution must come to an end. That organization, that is to say, the Roman Catholic "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction", for years has boastfully said and still says: "The gates of hell shall not prevail against [us]." These words of Jesus Christ concerning his own organization, which is the habitation of Almighty God, are misapplied by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy; and this is further

evidence of the presumptuous sin of that religious organization.

Jehovah foretold that the Hierarchy would make such boastful claims, and long ago he caused his prophet to record a prophecy concerning the Roman Catholic religious organization, in which that devilish organization is represented as saying: 'Yes, Armageddon is coming, but the overflowing scourge shall not come unto us, for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehoods have we hid ourselves. We have made a covenant with death, and with hell we are at agreement. We are safe and secure.'

Jehovah God replies to that declaration of the boastful and scornful men who for long have ruled the "Catholic population" and other people, and his answer is in these words: "Your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it." (Isaiah 28:14-18) Do you care to believe God or to believe those scornful and arrogant men? You must make your choice.

Have in mind also that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the religious system, is designated by the Lord God in these words: "The harlot," and old "whore", and "Babylon", "Babylon the great, the mother of harlots and abominations of the earth." For centuries that wicked organization has ridden upon the back of the beastly governments or ruling political and military powers, and now the time approaches when

God will put it into the hearts of those who shall be foolishly and wilfully evil, and they shall sin & pervert the truth; & God shall rebuke them, and burn them with fire." (Exodus 17: 15-17) That will mark the beginning of Armageddon. It is fit it should be known, together with their chief allies, that have for centuries oppressed the people; and therefore says the Lord Jehovah concerning them: "The Lord of hosts hath purpose of it, to stamp the people of all glory, and to bring into contempt all the honourable of the earth." —Isaiah 23: 9.

It is the Roman Catholic "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction" that has falsely and fraudulently assumed to shepherd the "Catholic population" and rob them and bleed them. Claiming to be shepherds, they have really been wolves; and to that wicked crowd Jehovah says: "Howl, ye shepherds, and cry; and wallow yourselves in the ashes, ye principal of the flock: for the days of your slaughter and of your dispersion are accomplished; and ye shall fall like a pleasant vessel"—Jeremiah 25: 31.

The Roman Catholic "Hierarchy of Jurisdiction", the religious system, is hypocritical in the extreme; and God hates a hypocrite, a racketeer and a liar, all of which that gang is. "The hope of hypocrites shall perish." (Job 8: 13) That hypocritical crowd of religionists carry on their racket concerning "purgatory" by which they rob many widows and orphans; and by means of false pretenses and the making of long prayers they are enabled to deceive and practice their racket; and to such Jesus Christ

says: "But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in."—Matthew 23: 13.

They viciously assault and persecute those men and women who faithfully serve God by carrying to the people his message of the kingdom; and like vipers which hide in the grass they hide behind the police and other officers to sting and otherwise injure the Lord's little ones, and to them the Lord Jesus says: "Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers! how can ye escape the damnation of hell? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city."—Matthew 23: 33, 34.

That proud, scornful, arrogant and presumptuous crowd of religionists think they are fooling the Lord; but even their sacrifices are an abomination unto him. (Proverbs 16: 5; 21: 27) Even their prayers are an abomination in the sight of God.—Proverbs 28: 9.

And when will the end of that hypocritical, religious organization come? At the beginning of Armageddon. Roman Catholic Action, as the selfish, political movement of the Hierarchy is now called, will soon convince themselves and others that they have put to silence all who tell the truth and who thereby expose the wickedness of the Hierarchy. Having spread their influence politically and otherwise throughout the

truth and obstruct the growth of growth and the spread of worship, and according to their own account from all opposition, flatly, after itself represented as saying, "We are now at peace and safety, we can go on without interruption and carry forward our great business." Concerning this matter the Lord said, "But when they shall say, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape." (1 Thessalonians 5:3) The religious systems that have for long defamed God's name shall be the first to fall at the battle of the great day of God Almighty.

"EVIL SERVANT"

The Scripture and the facts show that there are those who covenant to serve God, and who break their covenant, deny the Lord's coming, and begin to smite their brethren, and these the Lord designates the "evil servant". (Matthew 24:48, 49) One of the disciples of Jesus foreshadowed that "evil servant", and his name was Judas Iscariot. He was an enemy of God and of Christ. While Judas was professing to be the servant of Christ, he was conspiring with the enemy to have Jesus put to death and to have Jesus and his brethren betrayed into the hands of the enemy. For this reason Jesus called Judas "the son of perdition". (John 17:12) Some men of modern times have been greatly favored by a knowledge of the truth, and by having a part in God's organization, and have

then broken their covenant and become wicked, denied the presence of the Lord, and have gone about smiting those who do serve God and Christ Jesus. That wicked class, called the "evil servant", is the most reprehensible part of "the man of sin" and is described in the Scriptures as "the man of sin", "the son of perdition," of which Judas was a type.

Those composing the "evil servant" are the enemies of God and of Christ and his kingdom, and the fate of such is announced by the Lord in these words: "And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth." (Matthew 24:51) And again concerning that same crowd it is written: "Whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming" (2 Thessalonians 2:8) Concerning such "evil servant" class, "the man of sin," "the son of perdition," it is written: "But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption."—2 Peter 2:12.

OTHER TYPES

Jehu was a type of the Lord Jesus Christ and pictured him as the great Executioner of Jehovah. Jehu slew all the practitioners of the Devil religion who practiced in the land of Israel. Those people professed to serve God but had turned to Devil worship. Those re-

gionists were typical of "Christendom", professing to serve God but serving the Devil. In the commandment of the Almighty God Jehovah annihilated those Devil worshipers; and this foreshadowed and foretold that Christ Jesus will completely wipe out all religion and religious practices, because such defame the name of Almighty God. (2 Kings 10: 1-28) Religion has always been the chief means of deceiving men and reproaching God, because the Devil found it the best means by which he could deceive. Religion and religious practitioners will be the first to be destroyed at Armageddon. Christ Jesus, the great Executioner, will execute them and then proceed with the other elements of Satan's organization.-See *Faithful*, Book Three.

Symbolically the religious systems are likened unto a great city. That organization or "great city" is certain to fall in the near future, and the political, military and judicial and other supporters of the religious system, which have profited by that system, will see that they are next in order for punishment at the hand of the Lord, and then they will weep and wail: "The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, and saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! for in one hour so great riches is cast to earth." (Revelation 18: 13-17) Then they will attempt to burn their houses and naked

and all other forces into battle, but they will perish at the hand of the Lord.

"BEAST" AND "FALSE PROPHET"

The governing elements that rule the world, because of harshness and cruelty, are designated under the symbol of a "beast". Those elements of the visible organization of Satan which prophesy that the world can be recovered and the people blessed by the puny efforts of man are designated "the false prophet". Now behold Jesus Christ pictured as riding upon a war mount and going forth to war with all the enemy forces, and being followed by his armies in heaven, before whose onward march the "beast" and "false prophet" will be utterly unable to stand: Armageddon will proceed. "And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood; and his name is called The Word of God. And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. . . . And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a

strikes, choose which side they desire to be on. What is your choice?

INVISIBLE ENEMIES

The Scriptural evidence cited in a preceding chapter shows that there is a host of wicked spirit creatures who joined the Devil in his rebellion and who have since practiced fraud and deception on the human race and continue to reproach God's holy name. What is to be the fate of such? The chief one among that wicked angelic crowd next in order to the Devil himself is designated as Gog, who, together with other wicked angels, has his habitation in what is called "the land [place] of Magog". "Thus saith the Lord God [Jehovah], Behold, I am against thee, O Gog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal." (*Ezekiel 39:1*) A more detailed consideration of the Scriptures relating to Gog and the other wicked angels will be found in *Vindication*, Book Two, page 311 *et seq.*

Gog and the other wicked angels with him have for centuries exercised a ruling power over the nations of the earth. Having destroyed the wicked ones in the earth, Christ Jesus leads his forces against those wicked spirit creatures and destroys them; and concerning which it is written: "Thou shalt fall upon the open field; for I have spoken it, saith the Lord God. And I will send a fire on Magog, and among them that dwell carelessly in the isles; and they shall know that I am the Lord." (*Ezekiel 39:5,6*) It is further written concerning this same wicked crowd: "The Lord knoweth how to deliver us."

fully out of temptation, and to reserve the un-just unto the day of judgment to be punished." (2 Peter 2:9) "And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains, under darkness, unto the judgment of the great day." (Jude 6) Their end is destruction; as it is written that God has prepared a place for the complete destruction of all the wicked ones.—Matthew 25:41.

DEVIL LAST

It was the Devil who challenged Jehovah and who for centuries has despised and reproached him. Jehovah gave his word that the Devil shall feel His power; and that word will be kept, and the Lord Jesus Christ will execute Jehovah's purposes. The Devil is compelled to stand by and see all of his organization first destroyed. This will be humiliating to him when he knows that he is next. The Lord Jesus then binds him and casts him into "the bottomless pit", where he is completely silent for a thousand years. (Revelation 20:1-3) At the end of the thousand years Satan shall be released for a little season and then utterly destroyed.—Revelation 20:7-10.

The complete destruction of the Devil and his organization is the decree entered by Jehovah long ago, and which will be executed in his due time: "By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned; therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and

I will destroy thee, O corrupting church, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty; thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness; I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou hast despised thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy trafficer; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee; and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth, in the sight of all them that behold thee. All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shall thou be any more."—Ezekiel 25: 16-19.

Destruction is the everlasting fate of all the enemies of God. "His enemies shall lick the dust." (Psalm 72: 9) "For, lo, thine enemies, O Lord, for, lo, thine enemies shall perish." (Psalm 92: 9) "Thine hand shall be lifted up upon thine adversaries, and all thine enemies shall be cut off."—Micah 5: 9.

The Word of God is true; and from the indisputable testimony all doubt is removed as to who are God's enemies and what shall be their fate. In view of the frightful suffering the Devil and his allies have brought upon the human race, in view of the fact that a host of enemies are now operating in an attempt to destroy all mankind, and in view of the terrible things that shall shortly come to pass on the earth, as shown by the Scriptures, would you now care to be introduced to a real friend, in

whom you can put complete confidence and absolute trust and who will guide you into the way of everlasting life and happiness! If so, that privilege is now before you.

CHAPTER VIII

FRIENDS

"A man that hath friends must shew himself friendly: and there is a friend that sticketh closer than a brother." — Proverbs 18: 24.

JEOVANII GOD is the Friend of all who love and obey him and who faithfully do that which is right. He called Abraham his friend because Abraham was faithful and obeyed him: "And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness; and he was called the Friend of God." (James 2: 23) This makes known God's unchangeable rule, that those who are faithful to God under the test are the friends of God. Who, then, is a friend? The Scriptures answer: "A friend loveth at all times." (Proverbs 17: 17) Love is a complete expression of unselfishness; therefore it is written: "God is love." (1 John 4: 16) Jehovah God is unselfish and can do nothing that is selfish. Everything he does is prompted by unselfishness. Even the destruction of his enemies is not for his pleasure, because he declares that he takes no pleasure in the death of his enemies. (Ezekiel 18: 23, 32) He destroys them for the good of those who do right and for the honor of his name, which is righteous and holy.

The Lord Jesus Christ is a Friend of all who love and obey God. He is the anointed King of

Jehovah, who shall rule the world in righteousness, and all his acts are prompted by love. How may a man have the Lord for his Friend? "He that loveth pureness of heart, and hath grace in his lips, the king shall be his friend." (*Proverbs 22:11, margin*) That means that if a man has a pure or unselfish motive in what he does, and his words toward God and Christ are gracious, that person is one of good will toward God, and the King, Christ Jesus, shall be his Friend. A knowledge of what God and Christ have done for man produces in the man of pure heart a great desire to have God and Christ for friends. Briefly, then, consider some of the scriptures showing the loving-kindness of Jehovah and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

By reason of the fact that Adam chose to disobey God and follow the Devil Adam was justly sentenced to death, and the result to his children was that they were born imperfect. All men, therefore, are conceived in sin and born in iniquity. (*Psalm 51:5*) "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned." (*Romans 5:12*) If a man then chooses to support the Devil, he could never have God for his Friend. God was under no obligation to do anything for imperfect man, the sinner. Because God is love, he unselfishly provided the way for imperfect men to be reconciled to him and given an opportunity to obtain life everlasting as a gracious gift; and this provision he made by and through Jesus Christ, thus proving that God and Christ are

the great and everlasting Friends of all who want to do right. Therefore it is written: "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." (John 3:16) "For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord."—Romans 6:23.



Author of
Christianity

What, then, is required of a man that he may put himself in line to receive the blessings that God has in reservation for the obedient ones? The man must first believe that God exists and that he is the rewarder of them that seek him and serve him unselfishly (Hebrews 11:6), and he must believe that Jesus Christ is his Redeemer and Savior. If the man chooses to believe God and Christ, and to put himself on the side of

God and Christ, instead of remaining on the side of the Devil, that shows his heart is right toward God. That is not requiring very much of

any honest man. All such should want to be on the side of God and Christ. If God would compel men to believe on him and Christ Jesus, that would not leave the matter to the choice of man. But God does not compel man to believe. He brings man face to face with His truth and shows man what provision God has made for him, and thus he affords man the opportunity to exercise freely his choice. If the man chooses to turn aside from God and serve the Devil and the Devil's religious agents, he thereby deprives himself of God's favor. His first step is to seek the Lord and serve him; and if he does not do this he abides under the Devil's rule and the wrath of God. For this reason it is written: "He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him."—John 3:36.

How differently religious organizations operate toward man! The Roman Catholic religious system has a long and wicked record of torture inflicted upon men to compel them to believe what that religious system teaches. Falsely that religious system claims to represent God, when in fact it is God's enemy and the representative of the Devil. The man seeking consolation enters the building called the Catholic church "cathedral", and as he enters he is required to go through certain forms and ceremonies and to put his money in the box, and then he listens to some harangue and is told, if he fails to do what the clergy tell him God will punish him; and for fear he obeys what the Catholic system

teachers. Therefore God says of such: "Wherefore saith the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their love toward me is taught by the precept of men."—Isaiah 29:13.

Are there clergymen who teach the precepts of men your friends, and the friends of God? No, they are not, but, on the contrary, they are enemies of God, as it is written: "Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God." (James 4:4) The evidence hereof before examined shows that the Catholic system is a part of the wicked world and therefore the enemy of God. If you support an organization that or crowd that upholders of God, then you do not have the Lord God and Christ Jesus for your favorite. What, then, must a man do who is in a religious organization? The *Prophetic Answer*: "Depart out of her and be separate from her, lest ye partake of her sins and the uncleanness of her practices," which shall be fulfilled at Armageddon.—2 *Corinthians* 6:17-18; *Revelation* 18:4.

Next: *I am not the Friend of everyone who comes to the right.* If a just-minded person, if he has not yet been introduced to the truth, has not yet given his heart to the Lord, then he is not yet a friend of God and of all the saints. And he who does not yet know his life is a sinner, and if he does not yet know the way, the way friend and a saint is not yet known. In 2nd *John* 1:7 it is written: "If anyone does not know God, he does not yet know himself." *For* *the* *right* *is* *not* *for* *all*. *For* *the* *right* *is* *for* *the* *saints*, *and* *not* *for* *the* *sinners*.

nine. As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father; and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd."—John 10: 14-16.

Thus for love and in loving obedience to Jehovah Christ Jesus brings those who obey him into God's fold, the place of safety. Those who thus believe on the Lord Jesus Christ he considers friends, and it was for these that he gave his life. "Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends." (John 15: 13) A man may have Jesus for his friend on condition of his obedience: "Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you."—John 15: 14.

A time of great crisis has come, because these are the "last days" and hence the time of God's reckoning with his enemies. God is therefore bringing to the attention of the people the truth as expressly set forth in his Word, the Bible, to the end that all men that are of good will toward God who desire to do right, and who hate wickedness, may have the opportunity of breaking away from Satan's organization and taking their stand on the side of God and Christ. All the Scriptural evidence and the indisputable facts show that the time of the execution of God's vengeance against all wickedness is at hand. Satan the enemy is against all persons who desire to serve God, and hence all who take their stand on the side of the Lord are "not desired" by the Devil and his religious

of punishment on earth. It is evident there will be
more than this, it is evident to express his wrath,
therefore I charge each to the people of God
will gather yourselves together, yea, either
now or then, to stand in not dreary before the day
comes him forth, before the day parts on the
earth, before the latter end of the Lord comes
again unto us, before the day of the Lord's anger
comes upon you." Zephaniah 2: 1, 2.

Why gather yourself together? That you
may thus plentifully yourselves as being on the
edge of that Then what must you do? The Lord
answers "Seek ye the Lord, all ye work of the
earth, which have wrought his judgment [as
commanded], seek righteousness, seek meek-
ness, it may be ye shall be hid in the day of
the Lord's anger." Zephaniah 2: 3.

How may one "seek righteousness"? By dili-
gently ascertaining what is right; and this one
does by searching God's Word and that which
the Lord has provided for the understanding
of his Word. "The law of the Lord is perfect,
converting the soul: the testimony of the Lord
is sure, making wise the simple: the statutes
of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart; the
commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening
the eyes: the fear of the Lord is clean, endur-
ing for ever: the judgments of the Lord are
true and righteous altogether. More to be de-
sired are they than gold, yea, than much fine
gold; sweeter also than honey and the honey-
comb. Moreover, by them is thy servant warned;
and in keeping of them there is great reward."
(Psalm 19: 7-11) Man must be guided in the

right way, and the only right guide is God's Word; as it is written: "Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path."—Psalm 119:105.

How may a man "seek meekness"? "Meekness" means being teachable and having a desire and willingness to learn. One must diligently seek to learn what is contained in the Word of God. Shall the man thus seeking meekness be guided by what other men say? No; because all men are imperfect and no man's opinion or teaching nor that taught by organizations is right. Only the Word of God is the true and correct guide. We are not to put our trust in men, but to trust in the Lord; as it is written: "Put not your trust in princes, nor in the son of man, in whom there is no help." —Psalm 146:3.

If a man is the friend of God and obeys God, will God guide him in the right way? Yes; and the answer of the Lord makes this sure: "The meek will he guide in judgment, and the meek will he teach his way." (Psalm 25:9) If a man desires to be taught and led in the right way and he trusts in the Lord and follows the Lord's instructions, he is certain to receive the blessing of the Lord. If he follows the teachings of some religious organization, all of which teachings are based upon tradition, that man is certain to fall into the ditch. It is a case of the blind leading the blind, and the Devil gets the whole crowd.—Matthew 15:14.

The reason now clearly appears as to why religionists try to keep the people in ignorance.

of the Bible and books that explain the Bible, and that reason is, because the Bible condemns all religion and all traditions of men, and the Bible alone makes clear the pathway of righteousness. The Devil and his agents attempt to withhold the Bible from the people, lest the people should learn the truth and then flee from the Devil religious organizations and find refuge in the Lord. Those who love the Lord, and who are now obedient to God and Christ Jesus, are going from place to place carrying to the people books and other publications to aid the people of good will to learn what is God's purpose as expressed in his Word. The Devil and his agents persecute all who thus serve Jehovah as his witnesses, because the Devil is God's enemy, and the Devil and religious systems are enemies of those who love and desire righteousness. Jehovah's witnesses do not carry the truth to the people for their own selfish aggrandizement, but they do so in obedience to God's commandment; and God commands that work to be done because of his unselfishness, to give the people the opportunity to learn the truth and get in line for the blessings he has provided. Thus God is showing that he and Christ Jesus are the everlasting Friends of all who diligently try to do right. Your opportunity is now afforded to choose whom you will serve.

BLESSINGS

The battle of the great day of God Almighty will be so terrible that no human words can adequately describe it. With all the nations

fighting amongst themselves it would be bad enough; but when the Lord takes part in this conflict and the forces of heaven fight against all unrighteousness, all the nations are certain to fall. By his prophet the Lord says of that time: "Come near, ye nations, to hear; and hearken, ye people; let the earth hear, and all that is therein; the world, and all things that come forth of it. For the indignation of the Lord is upon all nations, and his fury upon all their armies; he hath utterly destroyed them, he hath delivered them to the slaughter. Their slain also shall be cast out, and their stink shall come up out of their carcases, and the mountains shall be melted with their blood. And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved, and the heavens shall be rolled together as a scroll: and all their host shall fall down, as the leaf falleth off from the vine, and as a falling fig from the fig tree. For my sword shall be bathed in heaven."—Isaiah 34:1-5.

All the wars combined that have ever afflicted mankind cannot be compared to what Armageddon will bring upon the world in the way of trouble. Concerning that time Jesus says that the tribulation will be such as never before was known. (Matthew 24:21) No human power can provide any place of safety for man during that time, but God can provide a place of complete security. "Thou, Lord, only makest me dwell in safety." (Psalm 4:8) It will be a real blessing to have such safety in that terrible ordeal. And who can have the assurance of such security? Jehovah answers that question in these words:

"Seek righteousness, seek meekness; it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the Lord's anger." (Zephaniah 2:3) That is a great blessing for which one should gladly look forward: "The name of the Lord is a strong tower; the righteous runneth into it, and is safe." (Proverbs 18:10) "Whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe."—Proverbs 29:25.

When God took the Israelites into Palestine he caused certain cities to be set aside and provided as a place of safety for those who were in danger of death by reason of having unwittingly committed a great wrong, and those cities were designated "cities of refuge". When a man fled to one of those cities for safety, as long as he remained within the bounds of the city of refuge no one could harm him. (Numbers 35:6-33) The cities of refuge were typical of God's great organization, of which Christ Jesus is made the Head. (1 Corinthians 10:11; Hebrews 10:1) At the present time, when one flees from the Devil's organization, where he has unwittingly committed wrong against God and against man, he thus flees by taking his stand firmly on the side of God and Christ Jesus, believing on and trusting in the Lord and serving him; and if he remains true and faithful to God and Christ, he has the promise of the protection which Jehovah God has provided, and thereby he may be secure from all harm during the battle of the great day of God Almighty, and thus be carried through that great trouble and be in line for the blessings that shall be ministered unto the people by the Lord when that great

and terrible storm is overpast. He must remain faithfully in the Lord's organization, and not depart therefrom; and that means, he must stand firmly and faithfully on the side of God and Christ Jesus, and love, serve and obey God.

Peace is another immediate blessing to those who take their stand wholly on the side of God and Christ and who continue to trust wholly in the Lord and to serve him. Among the precious promises written to those who serve God is this one: "Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee; because he trusteth in thee. Trust ye in the Lord for ever: for in the Lord JEHOVAH is everlasting strength."—Isaiah 26: 3, 4.

When the battle of Armageddon is done and all the wicked are destroyed, peace will then abide for ever, because the great "Prince of Peace" will rule and "of his government and peace there shall be no end". (Isaiah 9: 7) Those who are then with God's organization and under his righteous government will continue in peace.

Regeneration is one of the great works that will be performed by the Lord Jesus Christ during his thousand-year reign. (Revelation 20: 4, 6) That means the uplifting of obedient ones of mankind and the bringing of such up to a state of perfection of body and mind. God created the earth for man, and he created man for the earth. (Isaiah 45: 12, 18) In order for man to enjoy the blessings of the earth forever he must live forever in health and happiness. Sickness and death are enemies of man. Armageddon will destroy all the visible enemies, and

In the power of Christ audience and agents will be destroyed as it is written "For he shall destroy all his hosts put all enemies under his feet." The last enemy that it is the Devil, "I go forth" is I Corinthians 15:24, 26. With all enemies out of the way, working with him, all grace will be given and no one will be in need of any creature.

Many are the remarkable blessings to flow to those of mankind who love and obey God and his kindom, and command them over them; and that which is the chief one to man is life in happiness. Life is the gift of God through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Romans 6:23) No one can receive the benefit of a gift, however, unless he accepts the gift on the terms given; and that means that those of mankind who receive the blessings of everlasting life from God through Christ Jesus must be fully obedient to God and Christ. To have life everlasting in health, strength, peace and happiness, and to know God and Christ Jesus and serve them, is the greatest blessing any creature could enjoy. All of those blessings will result to those who know, love and obey God and his King; as Jesus stated: "This is life eternal that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent" (John 17:3) God and Christ Jesus will be the everlasting Friends of obedient men and will minister blessings to such obedient ones without end.

All these blessings come as a gracious gift and are therefore prompted entirely by love. Only the Devil, the great enemy, and his agents,

the religious organizations, could attempt to deprive men of such marvelous blessings or to keep them in ignorance of what God has provided for those who know and serve him. Therefore when all of these enemies are for ever removed, the obedient ones will dwell with the Lord, their great Prince and Helper, and nothing will interfere with their boundless blessings and eternal happiness.

Jehovah God has given his sure and unfailing Word that he will make the earth a glorious place, in which perfect man may dwell for ever: "The glory of Lebanon shall come unto thee, the fir tree, the pine tree, and the box together, to beautify the place of my sanctuary; and I will make the place of my feet [the earth] glorious."—Isaiah 60:13; 66:1.

That means that everything will be removed from the earth that mars its beauty, peace and happiness. It is the enemies of God and righteousness that make the earth now a place of great sorrow. Those who desire to stand by the enemies will go with Satan and all other enemies into everlasting destruction, and those who remain on the Lord's side will be in a clean earth. All the unseen creatures will be clean and holy, and all visible ones will be clean and pure. Strife, hatred, ill will, malice and wrongdoing will be entirely unknown, and all the wicked will be for ever out of the memory of man. (Psalm 109:15) "The name of the wicked shall rot" (Proverbs 10:7); which means that the wicked will not be remembered at all. Concerning the wicked it is also written: "Therefore hast thou visited and

destroyed them, and made all their memory to perish." (Isaiah 26:14) The present-day fame of dictators, great religionists, bishops, cardinals, popes, and all like scornful, haughty and austere men who rule and oppress the people, will have gone from the earth for ever, and the people will never again even think of them. It is an indescribable relief to now know for a certainty that such wicked ones can never again afflict the earth, and to know that the people will then be for ever free. The Lord has given his Word that wickedness shall never arise again.—*Nahum 1:9.*

Under the peaceful and blessed reign of Christ, the righteous Ruler, the peoples of earth will abide for ever and will be so joyful in the Lord that they will think always of the goodness and loving-kindness of their great Friends, Jehovah God and Christ Jesus: "They shall abundantly utter the memory of thy great goodness, and shall sing of thy righteousness. The Lord is gracious, and full of compassion; slow to anger, and of great mercy. The Lord is good to all; and his tender mercies are over all his works. All thy works shall praise thee, O Lord; and thy saints shall bless thee. They shall speak of the glory of thy kingdom, and talk of thy power; to make known to the sons of men his mighty acts, and the glorious majesty of his kingdom. Thy kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and thy dominion endureth throughout all generations."—*Psalm 145:7-13.*

Faithful Christians, truly and sincerely following in the footsteps of Christ Jesus, and

who are obedient to the Lord's commandments, and who are therefore showing forth the praises of Jehovah and his King, now enjoy the peace of God which passeth all human understanding. (Philippians 4:7) Other persons look upon them and observe with astonishment the joy and contentment that shines in their countenance, and wonder why such is possible when there is so much sorrow in the earth. The reason is that Jehovah's witnesses know that the day of deliverance is near at hand, because Christ Jesus, the great Deliverer, is here, he for whom true Christians have long looked, hoped and prayed. It is the time of rejoicing for all such. Therefore they lift up their voices with singing and praise to God and Christ. Those faithful ones will have their eternal abiding place with Christ Jesus in his kingdom. (Luke 22: 28-30; Revelation 3: 21) Together with holy angels they will serve and praise the Most High for ever, giving honor to his holy name.

True to his promise, Jehovah God, through Christ Jesus, is now extending 'peace on earth to men of good will' (Luke 2:14); and such persons of good will toward God are fleeing from the enemy organization and hastening to find refuge in the organization of the Lord. Such are the "other sheep", whom the Lord Jesus is now gathering into his fold. They are called "Jonadabs", who have desired to serve God and have found the way. (2 Kings 10:15,16; Jeremiah 35:6-10, 18, 19) Those persons of good will are now coming from every land, kindred, people and tongue, and are rapidly forming the

"great multitude" that shall serve Jehovah and receive his blessings. They know who are their friends. For a long while they have cried because of the many abominable things done in the religious organizations in the name of the Lord (Ezekiel 9:4): they have hungered and thirsted for truth and righteousness, and, having come to their Friends, now they shall be fed. "They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb, which is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters; and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes." —Revelation 7:16, 17.

Seeing that religion is a fraud and a snare, and that their salvation proceeds from God through Christ Jesus, they take their stand and identify themselves as those who serve God and his kingdom. They are described in these words: "After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands: and cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb." —Revelation 7:9, 10.

The angels of heaven, and all the faithful who have been resurrected and are now with the Lord, rejoice with the great multitude; as it is written: "And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the

four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever."—Revelation 7:11, 12.

It is a time of joy because the Lord, Jesus Christ, is come and now it is clearly made to appear that soon he will for ever vindicate Jehovah's holy name. The faithful witnesses of Jehovah on earth now with ever increasing joy continue to go about proclaiming "this gospel of the kingdom" as commanded. They love to do so, because the Lord has commanded that it shall be done, and they delight to do his will. The great multitude joyfully join in the service and sing the praises of the Most High and, as it is written, "therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple; and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them."—Revelation 7:15.

The people now on the earth that are of good will shall know the truth, and the truth shall make them free. (John 8:32) Standing firmly on the side of God and his King, they shall abide in the place of safety under the hand of the great King. Surely every honest person who now hears the truth of and concerning God and his kingdom will hasten to identify himself with those who put their trust wholly in God and in Christ. The remnant are now praising the Lord, and they, together with others of good will, are joyfully saying with the psalmist:

"All the heavens shall praise thy wonders,
O Lord; thy faithfulness also in the conges-
tion of the saints. For who in the heaven can
be compared unto the Lord? who among the
sons of the mighty can be likened unto the Lord?
God is greatly to be feared in the assembly of
the saints, and to be had in reverence of all them
that are about him. O Lord God of hosts, who
is a strong Lord like unto thee! or to thy faith-
fulness round about thee! Thou rulest the ris-
ing of the sea: when the waves thereof arise,
then stilllest thou them. Thou hast broken Rahab in
pieces, as one that is slain: thou hast scattered
thy enemies with thy strong arm. The earth
are thine, the earth also is thine: as for
the world, and the fulness thereof, thou hast
seized them. The north and the south thou
hast created them: Tabor and Hermon shall
rejoice in thy name. Thou hast a mighty arm:
strong is thy hand, and high is thy right hand.
Justice and judgment are the habitation of thy
throne: mercy and truth shall go before thy
face. Blessed is the people that know the joy-
ful sound: they shall walk, O Lord, in the light
of thy countenance. In thy name shall they
rejoice all the day: and in thy righteousness
shall they be exalted: for thou art the glory
of their strength: and in thy favour our sons
shall be exalted. For the Lord is our defense;
and the Holy One of Israel is our King."

—Psalm 89:5-18.

INDEX

NOTE. Numbers refer to pages, Roman numerals, to paragraphs.

A

- Abel, Cain murders, 22, I, 201, I
submitted to God, 41, I;
24, II, 20, II
no religionist, 301, I
Aberomination of Desolation,
League of Nations ridden
by hierarchy, 301, I 304, I
Abraham (Abram), birth of,
faith of, 24, II
faithful to God, 21, II
friend of God, 323, I
predicted Jehovah that, 24, I
witness for Jehovah,
24, I, 24, I
Absolution, to criminals, 177, II
Adam, created, 23, III
not deserved, 24, I
sentence to death,
expelled, 24, I
Adversary, defined, 24, I
of God, 21, I
Ahab, Jezebel destroys house of,
24, I
led into Baalism, 304, III
America, Nazism in, 17, I
witchcraft in, 67, II
Angels, announced Jesus'
birth, 177, I, 207, II
falls of wicked, 301, I, II
judgment against wicked,
24, II, 24, I
reunite with great rejoicing,
24, II
spirit creatures, 21, I, II, I
last kept hot fire exists,
24, II
hard power of
materialization of, 21, I, II
Angels that signed, cast down
to hell, II, I
executed the reward at
Armageddon, 24, I
the chains of darkness,
II, I, II, III
reduced to hell,
24, I, II, I
water suspended death
sentence, 24, I, II, I
Antichrist, theory and
living of, 24, II, II
Associated Church, 21, I
Assassination of Jesus foretold, 27
200, 200000, 304, II
Anti-Christ begins to appear,
201

B

- Day, 117, I, 321, I
organized maintained, 147, I
Apostolic Successors, 231, II
Ark, flood survivors to, 41, I
Noah builds, 41, II
Armageddon, other strange
work, 302, II
beyond comparison with all
other wars, 301, I, 303, I
destruction of hierarchy etc.,
301, II, 329, I 323, II, 147, II,
202, I, 279, I 321, III
Devil and rebel angels
executed at, 21, I, 227, II
fight between Potemkin and
God's servitors, 174, II
first led by Christ Jesus,
221, I, 238, II, 237, II
filling earth, 21, I, 21, I, 21, I
bowling at, 301, I, 311, I
religion destroyed first at,
221, I, 226, II, 234, II, III
226, II, 323, II
Satan gathers forces for,
221, I, 226, I, 227, I
Satan's seven seals
destroyed at, 21, I, 227, II
man of the world at, 221, II
survivors of great God,
221, I, II
willows persecuted, 21, II
Artist for punishment not heat
police power, 221, I
American founded in the
desolation, 221, I, 221, II

C

- Book, Ahab leads, forced to
worship of, 201, I
god of Baalism, 24, I
Jehu destroys, 174, I
Babylon, destruction of Babylon a
sign of, 21, I, 221, II
ministers of temples at, 21, I
prophets of, 21, II, 21, I
the wise Babylon teaching at,
21, I
sons of Prophets, 21, I, 21, I
Barabbas, 21, I, 200000, I
Barabbas, 21, I, 200000, I
Jesus of, 21, I, II
drama, the greatest on, 21, I
greatest nations among, 21, II
Jesus of Christ, 21, I
evil genius against western taking
power of, 200, I
the last will be regenerated,
201

- Baptism, I; 197, II
the Great, 223, III
Baptism, evidence of covenant with God, 122, I
of Jesus, 199, I
Battle of Great Day of God Almighty, religion passes away in, 163, II
supremacy settled at, 227, II
terrible, 250, I
Beast, ascends out of pit, 223, I, 229, II
symbolic, 226, I; 227, I, 225, I
wars against Christ, executed, 313, I
Being, The only, 24, II
Belief, Hierarchy's methods to compel, 245, I
in God and Christ required, but not compelled, 244, I
in God's Son to gain life, 126, I-129, I
knowledge necessary to, 128, I, II
Besetting Sin, must be laid aside, 101, I
religion, 99, I-105, II
Bible, can now be understood, harmonized, 21, I
Catholic position as to, 175, I; 225, II
clergymen deny, discredit, 82, I, 92, I
contains the truth, 19, III; 79, I, 81, II, 92, I
men inspired to write, 79, II
must be studied for truth, 82, I
not existent before Moses wrote, 79, I
not for fool's, 80, I-81, II
preserved from destruction, 92, I
provision made for writing, 92, I; 98, I
Religionists cause prejudice against, 21, I
why efforts to keep people ignorant of, 219, III
Blessings of God, Devil keeps people ignorant of, 254, II
enjoyed unhampered, 254, II
Requirements to receive, 254, I, 257, I-259, III
Blood, forgiveness of sin required shedding of, 123, I, 182, I
Life in the, 123, I
of Jesus cleanses sin, 199, I
ransom by Jesus', 123, I
body of Christ, Jehovah's witnesses are of, 221, II
the church, 122, II-124, I
Britain, will it become Fascist? 291, II-292, II
British (Empire)
Commonwealth of Nations, after the World War, 15, I
Catholic suppression of truth in parts of, 169, I
Hierarchy seeks to gain control of, 165, II, 169, II-173, I
overthrow threatens, 15, I
- C**
- Cain, murders Abel, 21, I; 201, I
names city for son, 202, I
practiced religion, 201, I
Caanan, command to destroy strongholds of, 245, I
Catholic Action, deceives itself, 221, III
Instrument of Hierarchy, 173, II, 276, II, 280, II, III
in United States, 166, I-167, II, 219, II, III; 260, II, 262, III
Catholic Bible: see Douay
Catholic Population, constitutes symbolic sea, 214, I
contributions to Hierarchy from, 177, I, 214, I, II
in United States and world, 170, II, 177, I, 214, I
misled, deceived, 200, I
not members or part of church, 153, II
Catholics, many, desire to know and serve God, 191, I
truth now heard by, 191, II
Censorship, Hierarchy exercises, 229, III
Ceremonies (Catholic), condemned by Jesus, 176, I
not authorized by Jewish ceremonies, 191, I, 183, I
not indulged in by Jesus or apostles, 183, II
religious, 183, II
Chains of Darkness, angels delivered to, 51, I-52, III
Chaldæans used as God's executioners, 243, I-253, I
Challenge, effect of the Devil's, 53, II
Jehovah accepted, 53, II
Cherub, destruction of the covering, 222, II
Lucifer, the anointed, 23, III, 24, I, II, I
Christian, pass over to; for rest, 217, II, 218, I
revelation from hand of, 217, I, 229, I, 242, II
Choice, as to destiny, 31, II
God grants exercise of, 31, I

- eternal, for life or for death, 122, II, 123, I
 permitted, whether to serve God or Devil, 121, II; 123, I
- Christ, church fits up afflictions of, 122, II
 meaning, 122, I; 126, II
 Christian, defined, 120, I
 must follow Jesus' footsteps (example), 122, II
 Christianity, defined, 120, I
 Jewish established, 120, I; 125, II
- Christian Religion, formed in Christendom, 121, I
 misnamed, fraudulent, 120, I
 mother of the, 124, II
 not Christianity, 120, I
 takes name of Barlot,
 Babylon, 206, I
 the greatest racket, 144, II, 146, I
 world conditions under the practice of, 123, I
- Christ Jesus, all judgment committed to, 316, I
 begins interrupting Satan's rule, 223, I, 225, III, 226, I
 Chief Corner Stone, 124, I
 counts conduct toward Christians as unto himself, 221, II, 223, III; 225, II
 destroys God and wicked angels, 223, I, II
 exalted above all, 122, II
 executes world rulers at Armageddon, 225, I-226, II
 Faithful and True Witness, 127, II
 Friend to loving, obedient ones, 242, II; 246, II
 gave life for sheep, 226, II; 247, I
 Head of church, 122, II;
 123, I, 127, I
 Israel foreshadowed, 226, I; 227, I
 Jehovah's King, 242, II
 Jehovah's executioner, 229, I; 231, II
 judges at Armageddon, 217, II-218, II
 trust wait before beginning to reign, 204, I, 205, I
 never a religionist, 120, II
 Rock upon which church is built, 121, I
 the promised Seed, 26, I-27, I
 The Stone, 122, I, 126, II
 Church, a fortress before
 Gentiles, 124, I, II
 body of Christ, 122, II; 123, I
 built on Rock, 124, I, 122, I
- Christ, Foundation and Cornerstone of, 124, I
 Christ Jesus the Head of, 121, I, 122, II
 Devil tries to destroy 123, II
 faithful ones made part of, 128, I
 fights by proclaiming truth, 120, I
 gates of hell prevail not against, 121, I
 God by Christ Jesus builds, 121, I, 122, I
 God selects, assigns members of, 122, I, 124, I
 God's purpose in having, 125, I-126, II
 God's witnesses on earth, 123, II, 126, II, 127, II, 128, I
 in early centuries, 122, I, II
 name misappropriated by man, 123, I, 124, II
 not a religious organization, 120, II
 not human building, 121, I;
 123, I, 124, II, 223, I
 not written on books on earth, 221, I, 224, II
 temple of God, 224, II
 worships God, not man, 123, I, 125, I
 Zion, God's capital organization, 124, II
- Cities, Devil induced building of, 61, I
- Cities of Refuge, right to, 212, I
 Jehovah's organization, 225, III; 226, I
- City, fall of rebellion, that street, 224, I
 Barlot (Hierarchy) goes singing about the, 276, I-277, I
- Clergy, agents of Devil, 21, I; 102, I-120, I
 come into power, 223, I
 did not join Jesus in preaching Kingdom, 215, II
 fail to escape in disguise, 213, I
 fall for Hierarchy, 272, II
 full of sin, secret, 102, I
 save Jesus no burial, 227, I
 heard not but opposed Jesus, 216, I; 217, II
 hypocritical practices of modern, 211, I
 keep people from studying understanding Bible, 21, I
 part of "man of sin", 204, I
 prevent people from entering Kingdom, 215, II
 Protestant and Jewish, help



- III, 8-223, I
 of human soul, 222 III
 to those remaining on
 Earth's side, II, I, 227 II
 wicked angels yet suspended
 sentence of, II, I, II, I
 Description, 22 in world's
 existence, II, I
 of man by God, II, I-42, II
 time of greatest, II, I
 Democracy, not made safe by
 world war, II, I, II, II
 threatened in Britain
 France, America, II, I, II
 Desolation, of Jerusalem, II, I
 of spiritual Israel
 II, II, II, II
 Destiny, how determined, II, II
 Destruction, fate of God's
 creation, II, II, II
 of Satan's army, II, II, II
 of wicked Armageddon
 II, II, II, II
 Judgments after Peace safely
 try, II, II, II, II, II, II
 to Israel and world angels,
 II, II, II, II, II, II, II
 to just men, II, I
 Devil, II, II, II, II, II, II
 to make a mode for
 himself destroyed, II, II, II
 threatened God, II, II
 forms his existence, II, I
 heralds him equal
 to God, II, II
 God ruled after the
 creation of, II, II, II, II
 first and second, II, II, II
 his human, II, II
 invention of creation, II, II
 last of the, II, II, II
 law as to God, II, II, II
 Unrest, II, II, II
 but deprived of power
 after flood, II, II
 over Satan's rocks, II, II, II
 permitted to persecute God's
 servants, II, II, II
 to world's destruction of
 II, II, II, II, II, II, II
 God's enemies, II, II, II
 through Jesus' name from God,
 II, II, II, II, II, II
 man as form of God,
 II, II, II, II, II, II
 permitted to form
 II, II, II, II, II
 and blaspheme, before God's
 throne and God's presence,
 II, II, II, II, II
 especially turned to
 Jesus, II, II, II, II
- Devil, first and, II, II, II
 God's principalities,
 powers, rulers, II, II
 gain control of man's mind,
 II, I, II, II
 Prince of, II, II, II, II
 Devil Worship, impelled
 formed to, II, II
 Devotion to Jehovah gains
 God's approval, II, II
 Dictator, conduct of, II, II
 depending in United States,
 II, II, II, II, II, II, II
 method used to set up a,
 II, I, II, II
- Officials, put in power and
 supported by liberty,
 II, II, II, II, II, II, II
 rule in Europe after
 World War, II, I, II, II
 Sunday English influence, II, II
 not as in accord with,
 II, I, II, II
- Ocean American Bible, describing
 Christianity of Scandinavia,
 II, I, II, II
 approves of slavery
 II, II, II, II, II
- Oregon freight to war in
 Boston east out, II, II
 having its name changed to,
 II, II
 one of Pacific's names, II, II
 wars on account of human's
 greed, II, II, II, II, II
- Devil before the Lord, II, II, I, II
- E
- Earth destined to be, having
 created man, II, I, II, II
 of God, II, II
 possessed unto fire, II, I
 will be burnt to destruction,
 II, I, II, II, II, II, II, II
 Egypt, now ancient civilization,
 II, I, II, II
 now ancient civilization,
 II, I, II, II
 now at bottom of Tyre,
 II, I
 gathered nation, II, I, II, II
 the earth with, II, I, II
 that we have become part of
 man or not, II, I, II
 God's creation, including the, II
 in God's word, in God's, II, I, II
 power of the, II, I, II, II, II
 the flood passed, II, I, II
 not to human power,
 destruction of, II, I, II
 nation of men now
 fallen, II, I, II, II



321, 3-322, 1
 of human soul, 322, 323
 in those remaining on
 Satan's side, 321, 3 322, 1
 wicked angels yet suspended
 sentence of, 321, 3 322, 1
 Description, 322, 1
 existence, 322, 1
 of men by devils, 321, 3-322, 1
 time of greatest, 322, 1
 Democracy, not made safe by
 World War, 321, 3 322, 1
 threatened in Britain
 America, 321, 3 322, 1
 Israel, or Jerusalem, 322, 1
 Desecration, or spiritual Israel,
 322, 1 323, 1
 Destiny, how Determined, 322, 1
 Destruction, fate of God's
 enemies, 322, 1 323, 1
 of Satan's host, 322, 1 323, 1
 of world at Armageddon,
 322, 1 323, 1
 suddenly, after Peace-making
 322, 1 323, 1 324, 1 325, 1
 to level and knock down,
 322, 1 323, 324, 1 325, 1 326, 1 327, 1
 to great curse, 322, 1
 Devil, Hindu name for God, 322, 1
 bound, destroyed, 322, 1 323, 1
 challenging God, 322, 1
 comes into existence, 322, 1
 declared himself equal
 to God, 322, 1
 destroyed after the
 crucifixion, 322, 1 323, 1
 from God and destroyer, 322, 1 323, 1
 His "name", 322, 1
 the power of salvation, 322, 1
 man, father of, 322, 1 323, 1
 lies to God, 322, 1 323, 1
 murderer, 322, 1 323, 1
 destructions are works of,
 322, 1 323, 1, 324, 1
 not a creature of creation
 after him, 322, 1
 turned them all from God,
 322, 1 323, 1 324, 1
 into his own subjects,
 322, 1 323, 1 324, 1
 permitted to do his
 works, 322, 1 323, 1
 destructions are works of,
 322, 1 323, 1, 324, 1
 not a creature of creation
 after him, 322, 1

Devils, fast and, 322, 323
 opposite principles, 322, 323
 powers, rulers, 322, 323
 sum control of man's actions,
 322, 1 323, 1 324, 1
 prince of, 322, 1 323, 1
 Devil Worship, Israelites
 forced to, 322, 1
 devotion to Jehovah gains
 God's approval, 322, 1
 Dictator, conduct of, 322, 1
 impending in United States,
 322, 1 323, 1 324, 1 325, 1
 marked need to set up a,
 322, 1 323, 1
 Dictators, put in power and
 supported by Christianity,
 322, 1 323, 1 324, 1
 rule in Europe after
 World War, 321, 3 322, 1
 under spirit influence, 322, 1
 323, 1 324, 1
 325, 1 326, 1
 Devil's version little described
 322, 1 323, 1
 different strategy
 322, 323, 1 324, 1
 Dragon, fought in war to
 break man and, 322, 1
 Lucifer's name changed to,
 322, 1
 one of Devil's names, 322, 1
 wars on account of woman's
 seed, 322, 1 323, 1
 Once before the Lord, 322, 1 323

E

Earth cleaned to be inhabited
 by man not 322, 1 323, 1
 created by, 322, 1 323, 1
 dry land, 322, 1 323, 1
 covered with fire, 322, 1
 will be made a dwelling
 place for God in, 322, 1 323, 1
 Egypt commercial kingdom,
 322, 1 323, 1
 Egyptian leaders,
 322, 1 323, 1
 end of reign of Pharaoh,
 322, 1 323, 1
 creation history, 322, 1 323, 1
 creation week, 322, 1 323, 1
 creation & history part of
 man's life, 322, 1
 end of world destruction, 322, 1
 of old world, 322, 1 323, 1
 flood story, 322, 323, 1 324, 1
 the flood judgment, 322, 1 323, 1
 day in human history,
 322, 1 323, 1
 working days, 322, 1 323, 1
 Sabbath, 322, 1 323, 1

Israel, backsliding, 105, II
chosen by God for a purpose, 31, I
Jacob is named, 76, III
received law through Moses, 31, II
Israelites, beset by religion, 29, I-109, I, 102, I-103, II
delivered from Egypt, 73, I
oppressed in Egypt, 76, III-78, I
safeguarded by law unto Christ, 98, II-99, I

J

Jehovah, caused Mary to conceive, 122, I
Father, Life-giver, 197, I
Friend of loving, obedient ones, 342, I
goodness of, 356, I
inspired prophecy, 194, I
is love, The unselfish One, 26, II; 342, I
meaning, 24, I; 77, I
praise to, 359, II, 366, I
provided for mankind's ransom, 121, I-123, I
revealed himself to Moses, 77, I
righteous, holy, 26, II
supreme: rules universal organization, 26, I
the Great Rock, 132, I
the Great Spirit, 41, II
Who is like Him? 360, I
Jehovah's Organization, great multitude now seek, 357, I
symbolized by woman, 33, II
the church, 133, I-134, II
unrighteous are expelled from, 26, II
Zion, his capital, 134, II
Jehovah's witnesses, branded as Communists by Hierarchy, 225, II; 201, I
believe the Hierarchy, 225, II
Hierarchy leads in persecution of, 228, I; 221, III-223, I
no more restrained by Hierarchy, 213, I
obey God's commandment to publish truth, 343, III
peace and hope of, 356, II
sheep class befriended, 225, II
thus, destroyed Baalism, 105, I
pictured Christ Jesus as executioner, 223, II
Russia, desolated 70 years, 266, I-267, II
re-organization of God's people, 223, II

Tyre rejoiced at fall of, 297, II
Jesuits, encourage Communism, 164, I
Instrument of Hierarchy, 213, II
made contemptible, 240, I, II
used directly toward people by Hierarchy, 213 I, 214, I
Jesus, anointed, 109, II
began ministry at 30 years, 108, I; 122, I
birth of, not witnessed by clergy, 197, I
born holy, perfect, 123, I
clergy demanded death of, 118, II
common people, but not clergy, heard, 118, I, 111, II
consecrated self to God, 122, I, 123, I
died as accursed sinner, 124, I; 187, I
expressed not his own opinion, 21, I
falsely accused, conspired against by clergy, 118, I-119, I
hanged on tree, 187, I
maintained integrity, 124, I
perfect man on earth, 21, I
preached kingdom of heaven, 110, I; 208, II
preached to spirits in prison, 48, I-49, I
qualified to be God's Vindicator, 124, I
resurrected as spirit, divine, immortal, 125, I, 308, II
Son of man and Son of God, 123, I
tempted, resisted Devil, 103, II
worshipped Jehovah God, 109, II
Jewish Clergy (Rabbis), fellow Catholic Hierarchy, 212, I; 223, I, II, 225, I, II
Jews, Hierarchy uses, 221, I
Job, an example of the faithful, 83, II-90, I
Jonadab, 357, I
Joy of the Lord, a time of, 359, I, 350, I
Judas, foreshadowed "man of sin", 394, II
foreshadowed the evil servant, 222, I
Judgment, angels that sinned reserved unto, 60, I-62, II
at Christ's coming, 217, II
beginning at house of God, 218, I
committed to Jesus, 218, I

INDEX

concerning all flesh at flood, 46, I, 41, II
of nations now on, 223, II-225, II
on mankind to condemnation, 98, II
Justification, of life, 98, II
through faith, 75, I

K

King, Christ enthroned as, 210, II
Jehovah's anointed, 212, II
the days of one, 270, II
Kingdom, Christ's, not of this world, 224, II
preaching the Gospel of the, 319, I-320, II
vindicates God's name, 303, I
Kingdom interests, 318, I, II
Kingdom of God, Christ Jesus at second coming takes, 152, II
clergy prevented people's entering, 312, II
earthly conditions under, 256, I
fruits of the, 152, I
Given to Christ and faithful followers, 152, II, 159, I
has nothing in common with world kingdom, 158, II
Jesus bore witness to the, 110, II; 121, I
Kingdom of Heaven, is at hand, 303, I
Kingdom, God shakes the, 214, II
Kings, ten, turn against religious systems, 227, I
Knowledge, necessary to belief and life, 128, I, II, 234, I
of truth now needed, 20, II

L

Last Days, described, 145, I
proof of the, 312, II
time of deception, 207, I
Law, added till Seed came; a schoolmaster, 97, I
consequences of violating, 95, I
ended, being nailed to Jesus' tree, 131, I; 133, I
for man's benefit, 95, I; 97, I
fundamental, 91, I, II
Given to Israel, why, 15, I;
91, I, II; 94, I, 95, II-97, I
reason for written, 93, I
written on stone, 92, I
Lawmakers dictated to by hierarchy, 259, II; 272, III

League of Nations, a beast eighth world power, 231 abomination of desolation, 232, I, 233, II-234, I child of David, 235, II destroyed at Armageddon, 239, II
hierarchy (Hierarchy) rides the 233, I, 234, I, 235, II-237, I labeled as expression of God's kingdom, 233, I, 237 Pope sought seat in 162, II; 271, I, 233, I, 239, II
Lies are religionists, 118, I
Lie, Satan told first, 32, I;
36, I, 260, I
Lies, are made the hierarchy's refuge, 230, II; 234, I
Eve was told Religious, 239, I, II
Life, believers on Son receive, 126, II-128, I
by knowledge of God and Christ, 334, I
Given for ransom, 121, I; 123, I, 124, I
God's gift through Christ, 98, II, 27, I, 128, II, 234, I
God the Giver of everlasting, 31, I
God unselfish in providing, 127, I
justification to, 98, II
no murderer gains, 32, I
only to servants of God, 116, I, II
to the lawless, 33, I
Light, God's Word (the Bible) is a, 31, II
for the righteous, 31, I
Loos, in God's universal organization, 28, I
made flesh, why, 120, II
the first creation, 24, II
Love, defined, 34, I, 162, I
Lucifer, anointed cherub, 21, I
beautiful, corrupted himself, 28, I
coveted equality with God, 27, I
created, 25, I
deceived Eve, 23, I
fallen from heaven, 27, I
Given Authority over angels, 33, I, 31, I, 43, II
given charge of man, 20, I
in Eden, 23, III
in God's organization, 28, I; 23, I
man's overseer, 23, III, 26, I
sentenced to death, 23, I
Son of the morning, 31, I

M

- Magees, fire sent on, 229, II
land of, 24, II, 28, II, 228, I
spirits in prison in, 43, I, II
- Man, Jehovah's ideal, 302, I
- Mankind, ransom needed to
redeem, 121, I-122, I
sin and condemnation
passed on to, 26, II, 121, I
to inhabit cleansed earth,
45, II, 224, I
- Man of Sin, a composite body,
203, I
crafty operations of, 204, I, II
destruction of, 221, I
evil servant claim the chief
of the, 203, II, 204, II, 222, I
practices religion, 223, II,
224, I
sets himself forth as God,
205, II
- Materialization, of angels,
37, I, 107, I
of son of God, 22, I-23, I
of wicked angels, 37, I, 47, I
- Meek, guided and taught God's
truth, 22, I, 249, II
Identified, 26, II, 27, I, 52, I
- Book Jehovah, 244, I-249, III
- Meekness, how to seek,
32, I, 319, I-33
- Men of Good Will, peace to,
107, I, 207, II
- Men of renown, born, 46, I, II
destroyed in flood, 46, I
- Merchandise, made of people,
223, I, 224, I
not treasured nor brought
into temple, 243, II-252, I
of Tyre becomes bottomless,
244, I-254, I
of Tyre for those dwelling
before Lord, 257, I-259, I
- Mighty Men, Goliath, 46, I
- Men of renown, 46, I, II
- Mind, devil and demons gain
control of, 23, I, 24, I
- Missionary Work broken up
by Hitler's destruction,
223, II, 224, III, 225, I
- Money, defined, 23, II
- Love of, 23, I, II
- Moses, birth, training of,
24, III
- Jehovah revealed himself to,
7, I
- led Israel from Egypt,
18, I, 21, I
- Received law from God,
45, I-46, I, 52, I
- Wrote first five books of
Bible, 19, I, II, 46, I
- Latin figures controlled by

- Hierarchy, 272, II, 273, I,
280, III, 281, I
- Murder, due to Satan's
influence, 22, I, 223, I
goes with religion, 221, I
- Murderer, gains no eternal
life, 22, I
- Satan & 22, I, 223, II
- Murderers are religious, 228, I

N

- Name of Jehovah, proclaimed
before Jesus is determined,
44, I, II, I, 123, I, II
- Nations, destroyed by God's
forces, 210, I
distress of foretold, 18, II,
219, III
gathered for destruction,
226, I
given to Christ to be
destroyed, 238, II
- Nazis, in accord with the
Vatican, 164, I
- Instrument of hierarchy,
273, II, 281, I
- persecute Jehovah's
witnesses, 164, I
- Revolting fire charged to,
43, I, 47, I
- near Germany, 34, I
- to share control with
Hierarchy, 210, I, II
- Nazism, grows to life,
United States, 17, I, 279, I
organized pot in power in
Germany, 164, I, 282, III
pushed forward by
Hierarchy, 214, II
- Nebuchadnezzar, centralized
Crest Jews, 217, I
- Inward Egypt after Tyre,
27, II
- left waste to Jerusalem,
Tyre, etc., 21, I
- set up Babylonian empire,
215, II
- the stronger than, 21, I, II
- Nephilim, directed daughters
of men, 23, I
- Reigned temporary ones of
God, 21, I, II
- monks, 27, I
- not in the judgment at
Second AD, 21, II, III
- wicked angels maintained
as, 27, I
- New Name, Jehovah's
witnesses, 123, I
- New World at the end of the
ages, 44, I
- Planned, built Nisroch, 21, II
built by communists, trade,

- begins exercising temporal power, 161, I
 crowned and deposed kings, 221, II
 deprived of temporal power, 256, I-258, II, 263, I-265, II,
 271, II
 designated as God, 298, I
 during and after World War, 260, I-262, II, 268, I-271, I
 election of the first, 154, I, II
 escaped in disguise from Rome, 254, II, 255, I, 271, II
 Faecist leader opposed but now supports the, 270, II
 regains temporal power, 261, II-262, IV; 290, II
 representative of God of this world, 298, I
 Prayer, before Images with repetitions, 189, I, II
 for dead in purgatory, 171, I-172, I
 In secret, 110, I; 189, I
 of hypocrites, 110, I
 to God in Christ's name, 189, II
 vain repetitions in, 110, I
 Preparation of way before Lord's coming, 316, I
 Pride of all glory to be attained, 218, I-219, II
 Priests, conspired to kill Jesus, 118, II, 119, I
 did not receive Christ, 103, I
 Not witnesses to Jesus' birth, 107, I
 should have known and taught of Messiah's coming, 106, I
 Prince of Tyre, claimed to be God, 200, I; 203, I, II
 man and not God, 218, I
 Pictured Roman Catholic Hierarchy, 208, I, II, 209, II
 Princes of the church, 215, III
 Prophecy, for whom written, 195, I
 fulfilled, becomes food, 203, I
 God caused writing of, 194, I; 216, I
 not understand till God's time to unfold, 195, I, II
 revealed, strengthens God's People, 218, I, 222, I
 sure of fulfillment, 194, I
 prophetic Pictures, Israel was used to make, 219, I
 of God's purpose, 76, I; 78, I
 prophets, foretold religious organization, 195, I
 inspired, 194, I; 195, I, 196, I
 Protection against enemies, 22, I
 Protestant Church, of organized Christianity, 216, I
 plays into Hierarchy's hands, 222, I, II, 226, II
 Protestant Clergy, association League of Nations, 290, I
 not advantaged by link with Hierarchy, 223, I, II
 Purgatorial Purse, 214, II
 Purgatory, based on Leviticus' lie, 56, I-57, I
 Catholic teaching concerning, 172, I-173, I
 dead not alive in, 56, I-57, I
 doctrine it a racket, 171, I-172, I
 Source of revenue for Hierarchy, 171, I-172, I
 unscriptural, 173, II-175, I
 Purpose, against Tyro (Hierarchy), 216, I-218, II;
 219, III
 or League of Nations, 294, I
 of preaching Kingdom gospel, 224, II, 247, II
 of Satan, 31, II, 32, I, 61, II
- Q
- Question, at issue, to be settled in God's favor, 27, I
 Questions, answered by Christ Jesus, 19, II, 20, I
 roused by fears, 18, II, 19, I
 Scriptural answers to, 211, I
 which the reader must answer, 19, II, 20, I
- R
- Racket, defined, 192, I, 176, I
 of purgatory not forbidden by U.S. government, 173, I, 175, I
 Religion is a, 190, I
 remission-of-sins doctrine a, 173, II-174, I
 Racketeers, defined, 193, II
 Hierarchy are, 171, I-173, I
 will be destroyed, 175, I, II
 Rackets, kinds of, 176, I
 originate with Devil, 142, II
 Radio, Hierarchy and the, 210, I; 219, III
 Ransom, for how many? 126, I-128, I
 Jesus gave himself as, 121, I
 needed for man, 121, I-123, I
 Rebel, Lucifer (Satan) the great, 31, I

- Tyre built in mockery
of The, 207, II
 Roman Catholic Church
(Organization) history
(A.D. 1848-1919) cf.
233, I-243, IV
mother of "Christian
religion", 204, II, 210, I
no more entrance into
218, I, 249, II
rise and destruction of, 193, I
ruled by Hierarchy, political,
commercial, 205, I
 Roman Catholic Hierarchy,
advice against Bible
reading, 175, I, 183, I, 193, I
appointed for desolation,
239, III, 251, I
astonishment at destruction
- of, 220, I-221, II
239, I-249, II
attempts to gain world
control, 162, II-179, I, 193, I,
262, IV, 264, I, 266, II,
292, I; 291, I-292, I
Babylon the Great, 229, III
boasts of antiquity,
permanence and strength,
231, II, 233, II, 235, I, 239, I
chief visible enemy of God,
233, I, 235, I
claims of, tested by God's
Word, 156, I, 157, I
claims to be spiritual
higher powers, 235, I
commits fornication with
world, 238, I-239, II
deals with Big Business,
politicians, 224, II, 180, I
destroyed at beginning of
Armageddon, 329, I-331, III
destroyed before politics
and commerce, 227, III
241, II
destroyed by "ten horns".
229, III
development of, 152, I-155, I
Devil conceived idea of, 155, I
dominates League of Nations,
233, I, 234, I, 238, II-239, I
employs schemes to attract
people, 231, I
end of restraint from
destroying the, 243, II
enemy of God and Christ,
153, I, 231, II-236, I, 246, I
established in England,
Scotland, United States,
235, II; 237, II-239, I
execution upon, 249, I-251, I,
262, II
friend of world and servant
of Satan, 234, II-236, I
fruits disprove claims of,
158, I-159, II, 286, I
has practices like Buddhism,
165, III
has to move into destruction,
212, I-224, III
honors and obedience
demanded by the, 235, III
Identified as goats,
231, III-233, I
Identity of. Do you know?
145, II
Instruments to entrap now
used by, 273, II-275, I,
281, I, II
lamentation at destruction
of, 239, (II), 239, I, 252, II
makes lies its refuge, 229, I
makes up the Catholic
church, 155, II
most destructive racketeer,
155, I, 159, I, 163, I
mother organization, 231, I
no rest short of destruction
for, 247, II, 249, I
not forgotten 70 literate years,
264, II, 267, I-271, II
part of Satan's world, 246, I
practices whoredom with
rulers 246, I, 247, I
pretends to be the true,
only church, 155, II
previous attempts to lay
waste the, 217, II
prince of Tyre, 211, I
proved to be false repre-
sentatives of God by:
acquiring worldly riches,
160, I-161, I
backing up war programs
of politicians, 163, I, II
Catholic Action to control
world, 165, II-170, I,
218, III, 239, II, 234, II
ceremonies, peculiar
clothing, 180, II-188, I
exercising political power,
161, I-162, I, 165, II,
234, II-235, II, 261, I, II,
262, IV, 233, I, 234, I
instigating, supporting
dictatorship, 164, I,
224, II, 273, II, 275, I
operating purgatory
racket, 274, I-275, I
political alliance with
heathen rulers, 163, II;
234, II
prosecuting murderers,
rebellion, 161, I, 277, I
racket of remission of sin,
179, II-181, I
use of imps, cross, etc.,
180, II-181, I

- recompensed for ill-treating
God's people, 231, I-234, II
returns to a harlot's hire,
237, I-239, I
self-glorifying, but will be
abased, 236, I-240, II
stings like a harlot,
231, III-232, II; 230, VII
to cease rejoicing, 246, I
try to restrain Jehovah's
witnesses, 261, I, 287, I, II;
261, I
underclergy survive
destruction of, 241, II
uses a harlot's methods,
193, I, 199, I
uses means to compel others
to believe, 345, I
visited by Jehovah after
World War, 232, II
will cry Peace and safety,
232, I-233, I, 231, II, 331, III
Roman Empire, absorbed
heathen religions,
179, I-181, II
Rome, from Pagan to Papal,
143, I, 151, II
 history (A.D. 1843-1913) of,
 251, II
 pope loses, 236, I-239, II
 religion of, II, I, 143, I-151, II
Rulers of the World, executed
at Armageddon,
335, I-336, II
 under control of
 wicked spirits, 61, II
Russia, pope fears Bolsheviks
from, 232, II
spiritism in, 53, I
- S**
- Safety, Hierarchy will cry**,
 Peace and, 232, I-233, I;
 III, III
 place of, during Armageddon,
 331, I; 331, I
- Salutes**: see **Hung Salute**
 to men and objects violates
 God's law, 100, II
- Salvation**, attributed to flags
 or men by salute, 100, II
 attributed to God by
 Christ, 113, I
 call on Jehovah for, 113, I, II
 Devil turned men to
 creatures for, 63, I
 through Christ, 114, II
- Satan**, assaulted Job, 43, I, II
 Beelzebub, 26, II
 cast out of heaven, 263, I;
 273, I; 278, I
 challenged God's supremacy,
 43, I, II
- corrupted self for
commercialism, 266, II
gather forces for Armageddon,
231, I, 326, I; 327, I
had access to heaven, 43, II;
83, II; 89, II; 310, I
introduced religion, 290, II
king of Tyre, 230, I, 234, I;
231, I; 230, II
- Lucifer's name changed to**,
26, I
- responsible for world's woes**,
311, I-312, I
- spirit creature**, 34, I
uses angels and men, 34, I
uses religion, politics,
 commerce, 34, I
- Satan's Organization, Babylon**,
197, II
combines three visible
elements, 63, I, 233, I
destroyed at Armageddon,
335, I-337, II
plotted against God's
 organization, 328, I
purpose, effort of, 72, II
symbolized by bad woman,
137, II
- Saul**, fell to Devil, 53, I, 54, I
sought witch, 54, I-55, II
- Sea**, Catholic population, 216, I
hath spoken, 227, I
- Jehovah stretches out hand
over, 216, I, II
- symbolic, 210, I, 227, I
- Seance**, deceptive, 58, II
- Seed, of Serpent**, 33, II
 of the woman, 33, II
remnant of her, 317, II
the promised, 33, I, 106, I
- Serpent, Lucifer's name**
 changed to, 30, I
 meaning, 30, I, 23, II
- Seventy Years**, howl does not
proceed, 215, I-216, II,
222, V
on Tyre concurrent with
those on Jerusalem,
216, I-217, II, 234, I-237, II
- Tyre forgotten**, 224, II
- Sheep**, blessed for deeds in
 Christ's brethren, 225, II
 brought into the fold,
 216, II, 217, I
- nations separated as goats**
 and, 270, II; 323, I
- other**, 223, I, II; 216, II; 237, I
- people of good will**, 321, I;
323, I
- Ships of Tarshish**, howl, 212, II;
213, I-215, I, 232, II
- underpriests and**
 subordinates of hierarchy,

- 213, I-214, II; 206, IV
 Sickness destroyed, 243, III
 Sin, blood of Jesus cleanses
 away, 182, I
 death is wages of, 98, II
 entered World by Adam 98, II
 transgression of law, 97, I
 Six-Dawn Strikes, II, I, 61, I
 Song of the Harlot, addressed
 to Hierarchy, 272, I
 fulfilled on Tyre (Hierarchy),
 III, III-182, II, 309, VII
 Songs, harlot sings many,
 272, I-275, I, 282, I-291, I
 Sons of Jehovah's witnesses 274, I
 Sons of God, have opportunity
 for salvation, 42, I
 Imprisoned by Devil at
 Babylon, 43, I-49, I, 61, II
 married daughters of men,
 33, I-40, II
 materialized, 39, II, 29, I
 materialized, 39, II, 29, I
 騙ed by Satan's fraud,
 41, I-40, II
 not part of Satan's
 organization, 39, II, 43, I
 not protected against Devil
 at Good, 47, I
 originally part of God's
 Organization, 47, I
 Presented slaves before God,
 38, II
 Sorrows, World War the
 bearing of, 309, III, 311, I
 Soul, crew, ^{of} of human, 25, III
 defined, 173, III
 Spain, first republic in, 255, III
 Inquisition in, 165, I
 Rebellion backed by Hier-
 archy in, 165, I, 277, I
 Spirit, Jehovah the Great
 41, II
 Moved soon to write Bible,
 73, II
 strove with men, 42, I, II
 Spirit Being, God Almighty
 The, 21, I
 spirit Mediums, devils
 communicate by, 66, II, 67, I
 witches, condemned to
 death, 64, I-67, II
 spirit in prison, Jesus
 preached to, 66, I-69, I
 sets united with false church,
 153, I
 sets Religion at Rome,
 150, IV, 151, I
 Banjo Act, against Catholic
 organization, 229, I-232, I,
 233, I-240, II
 against Hierarchy's allies
 also, 222, I, II
 : Armageddon,
- 215, I-218, I; 249, II
 effects of, 224, I-243, I
 ends Jehovah's visit to Tyre,
 264, II, 287, I, 293, I
 inspection made of, 241, I, II
 Strange Work, begins
 Jehovah's visit to Tyre,
 264, II, 287, I; 293, I, 294, I
 inspection made of, 241, I, II
 Jehovah's witnesses have
 part in, 292, I, 302, II
 now exposes Hierarchy,
 240, II, 295, II
 Stronghold, no more, in
 Hierarchy, 243, I-243, II
 of the sea speaks, 227, I
 Strongholds destroyed at
 Lord's command, 245, I
 Superstitions, Devil makes
 people, 109, II
 Supremacy, Devil raised
 Question of, 82, II
- T
- Tabernacle, ceremonial
 prophetic, 184, I, 185, I
 Tarshish, colony of Tyre, 230, I
 daughter of, 241, I, II
 location, merchandizing of,
 212, II
 Pass over to, 230, I, II
 Temple, built by Solomon
 typical, 214, III
 composed of whom?,
 212, I-214, III
 of God is the church,
 134, I, II, 214, II
 separate from Satan's
 organization, 214, I
 Ten Commandments, given
 through Moses, 91, II, 92, I
 meaning, 91, I
 Ten Horns, receive power
 with the beast, 292, I
 shall hate, turn on, rend the
 whore, 217, I, 242, II
 244, II, 247, I, 248, III
 Testimony of Jesus Christ,
 129, II, 218, II-220, I
 That Day, day of Jehovah,
 255, I
 This forgotten in, 164, II;
 247, I, II
 Tower of Babel, Devil moved
 people to build, 28, I, II
 religion induced, 203, I
 Towers set up against Tyre,
 242, I
 Tradition by men, defined, 21, I
 implies void God's Word,
 114, I; 115, I; 129, I
 Treason falsely charged to
 Jesus, 119, II; 124, I

- War in Heaven, began, 263, I, 309, II
 marked beginning of world's end, 310, I
- Warning, given before flood, 43, I-44, II
 given to enemies and people of good will, 87, I
 to Israel by prophets, 108, I
- Weapons of Christians' warfare, 73, I, 140, I
- Whore, fornicates with kings, 258, I, 283, I
 reigns over kings, 252, I, II
 ride beast, 289, II-290, I
 symbol of Satan's organization, 197, II
 ten horns (kings) have the, 227, I, 234, II, 329, III
- Wicked, destroyed at Armageddon 316, II-327, II
 God's decree on fate of, 31, II, 46, I; 86, I
 who are the, 31, II, 190, I
 work deceitful work, 193, I
- Wickedness, before flood, 41, I
 how Satan carried on, 44, I
 permitted, why? 41, I
 to be removed, 255, II
- Will left free to choose, 104, II
- Wine of Babylon's fornication, 71, II; 283, II, 289, I
- Witchcraft, cases of, 54, I-51, II
 fruit of rebellion, 55, I
- Witches, are spirit mediums, 54, I-57, II
 God's law condones, 55, II
- Witness, all of church must bear, 127, II
 before end of world, 45, II
 before flood, 43, I-45, I
 Jesus' mission as, 129, II
 the faithful and true, 127, II
- Witnesses from Abel to John the Baptist, 29, II
- Witnesses of Jehovah, new name, 138, I
 not disposed to injure any man, 74, I
 those made, 117, I
- Wrongs, responsibility for, 311, I-312, II
 since A.D. 1918, 17, I-19, I; 311, I
- Woman, seed of, 55, II
 symbol of the organization, 25, II; 197, I
 symbol of Satan's organization, 197, II
- Word of God, Christ Jesus, 325, I
 reasonable that God give man His, 79, II
 sure correct guide, 52, I
 tests validity of Roman Catholic claims, 156, I; 157, I
 traditions of men make void, 114, I, 115, I
- World, consists of heaven and earth, 63, II
 defined, 33, I, 239, II
 end of the, 309, II
 flood followed by another, 43, I
 friend of, God's enemy, 216, I
 hierarchy in part and friend of, 244, II, 285, I
 Kingdoms of, offered to but refused by Jesus, 109, II
 old destroyed in flood, 63, I, II
 religious are of, 197, I
 signs of end of, 309, III
- World War, and war in heaven, 263, I
 beginning of sorrows, 311, I
 did not make world safe for democracy 11, I-15, II
 efforts of pope during and after, 260, I-261, II,
 265, I-271, I, 283, I
 proves end of world, 309, III
- Worship, of creatures begun after flood, 65, II; 86, I
 pure and undefiled, 125, I
- Worship of God, commanded, Jesus upheld, 193, II
 in spirit and truth, 123, I
- Wrath of God abides on unbelievers, 128, II

Z

- Zidon, ashamed, turns pale, 223, I, II
 before Tyre; symbolic, 204, I; 211, II, 244, I, 309, III
 name, relations, religion of, 197, I
 oppressed virgin daughter of, 244, I
- Zion, mother of God's children, 197, I
 perfection of beauty, 238, I
 pictured by woman, 197, I
 stone held in, 211, II
 the church, God's capital organization, 126, II

Religious Racketeers Don't Like Them

THEY DON'T LIKE YOU to read them either. Some will even tell you to BURN THEM!

* WHY? Because they don't want you to "get wise" to their game. They know that if you read the booklets below, then, for you, their racket is done; but your peace of mind and money are safeguarded. GET POSTED! Read:

WHERE ARE THE DEAD?	ARMAGEDDON
UNIVERSAL WAR NEAR	GOVERNMENT
DIVIDING THE PEOPLE	WHO IS GOD?
HOME AND HAPPINESS	PROTECTION
Beyond THE GRAVE	HEREAFTER
HEALTH AND LIFE	GOOD NEWS
WORLD RECOVERY	UNCOVERED
FAVORED PEOPLE	SUPREMACY
WHAT IS TRUTH?	HIS WORKS
KEYS OF HEAVEN	THE CRISIS
CAUSE OF DEATH	CHOOSING
WHAT YOU NEED	LIBERTY
THE FINAL WAR	ANGELS
HIS VENGEANCE	SAFETY

Each booklet is by Judge Rutherford and contains 64 pages of live, eye-opening, non-religious but Scriptural reading, sparkling with truth, for our day!

ANY THIRTEEN you pick, on contributing 66¢; any six, 25¢; single copy, 5¢. Sent postpaid to your address, anywhere. Write:

THE WATCH TOWER
117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N.Y., U.S.A.

Have you found that
"Christian Religion" Is a Racket? !!

♦ MILLIONS OF PEOPLE in and outside of "Christendom" are now realizing that from sad experience. If you are one such, or even if you're not and don't believe it's so, then you need

"CONSOLATION"

BECAUSE this magazine publishes the truth and not religion, not even that kind mislabeled "Christian religion". Adopting the viewpoint of the inspired holy prophets of old who foresaw the present-day passing away of this woeful condition and the ushering in of an unending joyous time for mankind "CONSOLATION" publishes the facts and news of the world from a standpoint that will be a real comfort to you and a priceless education.

Issued every other week, Wednesdays. Feature articles with uncensored information, including regular contributions by that acknowledged authority on government and Bible questions, JUDGE RUTHERFORD. The subscription price is \$1.00 a year; foreign countries, \$1.25.

Published by:

THE GOLDEN AGE PUBLISHING CO., INC.
117 Adams St. Brooklyn, N.Y. U.S.A.

Do You Enjoy Friends?

♦ IF YOU'VE READ the last chapter of the book ENEMIES then you know that your true Friends, who love you all the time, are Jehovah God and Christ Jesus. In a world crowded with racketeers and enemies, you need such Friends. How well do you know them! How much do you enjoy them! You will surely acquaint yourself with them and enjoy the sweet and hearty counsel of their FRIENDSHIP through the columns of

"THE WATCHTOWER"

This magazine ignores the traditions of men, which traditions are from your enemies, the religionists. It deals exclusively with the inspired Scriptures, the gift of your Friends, and regularly publishes the latest unfoldings of prophecy showing the unselfish acts and provisions of your Friends for freeing you for ever of your enemies, and also what is required of you to enjoy their Friendship for ever.

♦ PUBLISHED the first and fifteenth of each month, its contents exclusively Scriptural, no space for commercial advertising. Subscription price: \$1.00 a year; for foreign countries, \$1.50; special "terms to the Lord's poor". Send your subscription to

THE WATCH TOWER
117 Adams St., Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

